THE M: Whytehead

LIFE

AND MOST SURPRISING

ADVENTURES

.

Robinson Crusoe,

OF YORK, MARINER,

Who lived EIGHT-AND-TWENTY YEARS in an UNIN-HABITED ISLAND on the Coast of AMERICA, near the Mouth of the great River OROONOQUE.

With an Account of

HIS DELIVERANCE THENCE, AND HIS AFTER SURPRI-

A NEW EDITION, COMPLETE IN ONE VOLUME.

ENRICHED WITH ELEGANT PLATES, DESCRIPTIVE OF THE SUBJECT.



LONDON

PRINTED FOR A. MILLAR, W. LAW, AND R. CATER; AND FOR WILSON, SPENCE, AND MAWMAN, YORK.

Anno 1795.



wwwththth

e for b

vot toff vol

PREFACE.

If ever the story of any private man's adventures in the world were worth making public, and were acceptable when published, the Editor of this account thinks this will be so.

The wonders of this man's life exceed all that (he thinks) is to be found extant; the life of one man being scarce capable of a greater

variety.

The story is told with modesty, with seriousness, and with a religious application of events to the uses to which wise men always apply them, viz. to the instruction of others by this example, and to justify and honour the wisdom of Providence in all the variety of our circumstances, let them happen how they will.

A 2

The editor believes this narrative to be a just history of fact; neither is there any appearance of fiction in it: and though he is well aware there are many, who on account of the very fingular preservations the author met with, will give it the name of romance; yet, in which ever of these lights it shall be viewed, he imagines, that the improvement of it, as well as the diverfion, as to the instruction of the reader, will be the fame; and as fuch, he thinks, without farther compliment to the world, he does them a great service in the publication.

mere tiful ceive nam whice

F

lieut Spar N My me l

One Whatry, tent unea Aug

that the l derin

thefe dow dien shall

treat

may

LIFE AND ADVENTURES

OF

ROBINSON CRUSOE.

I Was born at York, in the year 1632, of a reputable family. My father was a native of Bremen, who by merchandizing at Hull for some time, gained a very plentiful fortune. He married my mother at York, who received her first breath in that country: and as her maiden name was Robinson, I was called Robinson Kreutzmaer: which not being easily pronounced in the English tongue, we are commonly known by the name of Crusoe.

I was the youngest of three brothers. The eldest was a lieutenant-colonel in Lockhart's regiment, but slain by the Spaniards: what became of the other, I could never learn.

No charge or pains were wanting in my education. My father defigned me for the law; yet nothing would ferve me but I must go to sea, both against the will of my father, the tears of my mother, and the entreaties of friends. One morning my father expostulated very warmly with me: What reason, says he, have you to leave your native country, where there must be a more certain prospect of content and happiness, to enter into a wandering condition of uneafiness and uncertainty? He recommended to me Augur's wish, " Neither to desire poverty nor riches:" that a middle state of life was the most happy, and that the high towering thoughts of raising our condition by wandering abroad, were furrounded with mifery and danger, and often ended with confusion and disappointment. I entreat you, nay, I command you, (fays he) to defit from these intentions. Consider your elder brother, who laid down his life for his hondur, or rather lost it for his disobedience to my will. If you will go (added he) my prayers shall however be offered for your preservation; but a time may come, when, desolate, oppressed, or forsaken, you

A 3

ive her ion

are

he

ch w-

re-

erhe

as

er

li-

and

and

fled

by

cal

W

kir

roa

an

fea

as

da

tid

for

fel

CU

46

ca

of.

wa

CO

th

th

th

for

CO

fee

lo

w

fte

pe

or

to

ec

tr

pl

as

m

di

may wish you had taken your poor despised father's counsel.—He pronounced these words with such a moving and paternal eloquence, while sloods of tears ran down his aged cheeks, that it seemed to stem the torrent of my resolutions. But this soon wore off, and a little after I informed my mother, that I could not settle to any business, my resolutions were so strong to see the world; and begged she would gain my father's consent only to go one voyage; which, if I did not prove prosperous, I would never attempt a second. But my desire was as vain as my felly in asking. My mother passionately expressed her dislike of this proposal, telling me, that as she saw I was bent upon my own destruction, contrary to their will, and my duty, she would say no more, but leave me to myself to do whatever I pleased."

I was then, I think, nineteen years old, when one time being at Hull, I met a school-fellow of mine, going along with his father, who was mafter of a ship, to London; and acquainted him with my wandering defires; he affured me of a free passage, and a plentiful share of what was necesfary. Thus, without imploring a bleffing, or taking farewel of my parents, I took shipping on the first of September 1651. We set sail soon after; and our ship had scarce left the Humber a-stern, when there arose so violent a storm, that, being extremely sea-sick, I concluded the judgment of God deservedly followed me for my disobedience to my dear parents. It was then I called to mind the good advice of my father; how easy and comfortable was a middle state of life; and I firmly resolved, if it pleased God to fet me on dry land once more, I would return to my parents, implore their forgiveness, and bid a final adieu to my wandering inclinations.

Such were my thoughts while the storm continued; but these good resolutions decreased with the danger; more especially when my companion came to me, clapping me on the shoulder: "What, Bob!" said he, "sure you was not frightened last night with scarce a capful of wind?"—
"And do you," cried I, "call such a violent storm a cap"ful of wind?" "A storm, you sool you," said he, "this is nothing; a good ship and sea room always bassles such a foolish squall of wind as that: But you're a fresh wa"ter sailor: Come boy, turn out, see what sine weather we have now, and a good bowl of punch will drown all your past forrows." In short, the punch was made, I was drunk, and in one night's time drowned both my repent-

ance and my good resolutions, forgetting entirely the vows and promises I made in my distress: and whenever any reflections would return on me, what by company, and what by drinking, I soon mastered those fits, as I deridingly called them. But this only made way for another trial. Whereby I could not but see how much I was beholden to kind Providence.

Upon the fixth day we came to an anchor in Harwich road, where we lay wind-bound with some Newcastle ships; and there being good anchorage, and our cables sound, the seamen forgot their late toil and danger, and spent the time as merry as if they had been on shore. But on the eighth day there arose a brisk gale of wind, which prevented our tiding it up the river; and still increasing, our ship rode

forecastle in, and shipped several large seas.

nid

ed s.

0-

ns

in

bi

ut

er

e,

n,

0

23.

e

gd

e

(-

-

-

1,

it

y

d

t

e

e

3

8

It was not long before horror feized the feamen themfelves, and I heard the master express this melancholy ejaculation, "Lord have mercy upon us, we shall be all lost
"and undone!" For my part, sick unto death, I kept my
cabin, till the universal and terribly dreadful apprehensions
of our speedy sate made me get upon deck: and there I
was affrighted indeed. The sea went mountains high: I
could see nothing but distress around us; two ships had cut
their masts on board, and another was soundered: two more
that had lost their anchors, were forced out to the mercy of
the ocean; and to save our lives we were forced to cut our

foremast and mainmast quite away.

Who is there so ignorant as not to judge of my dreadful condition? I was but a fresh-water sailor, and therefore it feemed more terrible. Our ship was very good, but overloaded; which made the failors often cry out, " She would " founder!" Words I then was ignorant of. All this while the storm continuing, and rather increasing, the master and the most sober part of his men went to prayers, expecting death every moment. In the middle of the night one cried out, "We had sprung a leak:" another, "That there was four feet water in the hold." I was just ready to expire with fear, when immediately all hands were called to the pump; and the men forced me also in that extremity to share with them in their labour. While thus em ployed, the master espying some light colliers, fired a gun as a fignal of diffress; and I, not understanding what it meant, and thinking that either the ship broke, or some dreadful thing happened, fell into a swoon. Even in that

to thrust me aside with their feet, thinking me dead, and it

was a great while before I recovered.

Happy it was for us, when, upon the fignal given, they ventured out their boats to fave our lives. All our pumping had been in vain, and vain had all our attempts been, had they not come to our ship's side, and our men cast them a rope over the stern with a buoy to it, which after great labour they got hold of, and we hauling them to us got into their boat, and left our ship, which we perceived sink within less than a quarter of an hour; and thus I learned what was meant by foundering at sea. And now the men incessantly laboured to recover their own ship; but the sea ran so high, and the wind blew so hard, that they thought it convenient to hale within shore; which, with great difficulty and danger, at last we happily effected, landing at a place called Cromer, not far from Winterton light-house; from whence we all walked to Yarmouth, where, as objects of pity, many good people furnished us with necessaries to carry us either to Hull or London.

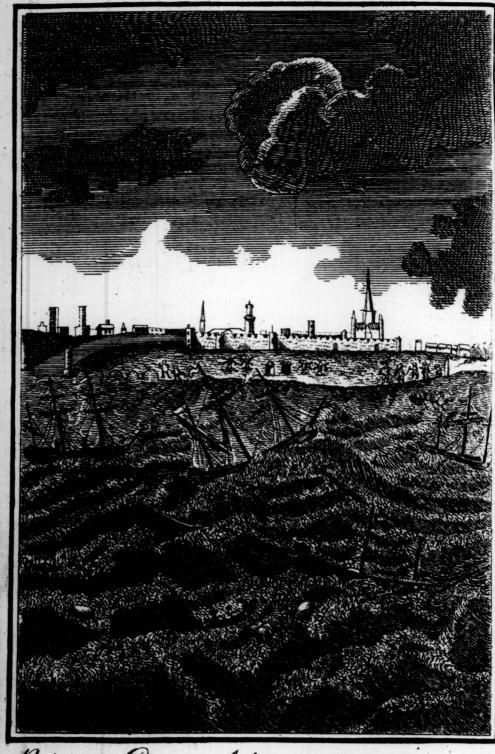
Strange, after all this, like the prodigal fon, I did not return to my father; who, hearing of the ship's calamity, for a long time thought me entombed in the deep. No doubt but I should have shared on his fatted calf, as the Scripture expresses it; but my ill fate still pushed me on, in spite of the powerful convictions of reason and conscience.

When we had been at Yarmouth three days, I met my old companion, who had given me the invitation to go on board along with his father. His behaviour and speech were altered, and in a melancholy manner asked me how I did, telling his father who I was, and how I had made this voyage only for a trial to proceed further abroad. Upon which the old gentleman turning to me gravely, faid, "Young man, you ought never to go to fea any more, but "to take this for a certain fign that you never will prosper in a seafaring condition." "Sir," answered I, "will " you take the same resolution?" " It is a different case," faid he, " it is my calling, and consequently my duty; " but as you have made this voyage for a trial, you fee what ill fuccels Heaven has fet before your eyes; and " perhaps our miseries have been on your account, like " Jonah in the ship of Tarshish. But pray, what are you, and " on what account did you go to fea?" Upon which I very freely declared my whole story : at the end of which ng l it

ey p-en, em eat in-nk ed en fea at it fi-

not ty, No prince. In this on id, the per vill ich

8 SE 74



Robinson Crusoe Shipwreckdat Yarmouth

he i

a d

that my ture to r for to r don

a ve anc coa a g fore

that be l to c dife

cap fhir my bou

cap of t the tics a m

this lent

line

life I re

BOY

he made this exclamation: "Ye facred powers! what had I "committed, that such a wretch should enter into my ship to heap upon me such a deluge of miseries!" But soon recollecting his passion, "Young man," said he, "if you do not go back, depend upon it, wherever you go, you will meet with disasters and disappointments till your father's words are sulfilled upon you." And so we parted.

I thought at first to return home; but shame opposed that good motion, as thinking I should be laughed at by my neighbours and acquaintance. So strange is the nature of youth, who are not ashamed to sin, but yet ashamed to repent; and so far from being ashamed of those actions for which they may be accounted fools, they think it folly to return to their duty, which is the principal mark of wifdom. In fhort, I travelled up to London, refolving upon a voyage; and a voyage I foon heard of, by my acquaintance with a captain who took a fancy to me, to go to the coast of Guinea. Having some money, and appearing like a gentleman, I went on board, not as a common failor or foremast man; nay, the commander agreed I should go that voyage with him without any expence; that I should be his messmate and companion, and I was very welcome to carry any thing with me, and make the best merchandife I could.

I bleffed my happy fortune, and humbly thanked my captain for this offer; and acquainting my friends in Yorkthire, forty pounds were fent me, the greatest part of which my dear father and mother contributed to, with which I bought toys and trifles, as the captain directed me. captain also taught me navigation, how to keep an account of the ship's course, take an observation, and led me into the knowledge of feveral useful branches of the mathema-And indeed this voyage made me both a failor and a merchant; for I brought home five pounds nine ounces of gold dust for my adventure, which produced, at my return to London, almost three hundred pounds. But in this voyage I was extremely fick, being thrown into a violent calenture through the excessive heat, trading upon the coast from the latitude of fifteen degrees north even to the line itself.

Bat alas! my dear friend the captain soon departed this life after his arrival. This was a sensible grief to me; yet I resolved to go another voyage with his mate, who had now got command of the ship. This proved a very un-

successful one; for though I did not carry quite a hundred pounds of my late acquired wealth, (so that I had two hundred pounds left, which I reposed with the captain's widow, who was an honest gentlewoman) yet my misfortunes in this unhappy voyage were very great. For our ship failing towards the Canary islands, we were chased by a Sallee rover; and in spite of all the haste we could make, by crowding as much canvas as our yards could spread, or our masts carry, the virate gained upon us, so that we prepared ourselves to fight. They had eighteen guns, and we had but twelve. About three in the afternoon there was a desperate engagement, wherein many were killed and wounded on both fides; but finding ourselves overpowered with numbers, our ship disabled, and ourselves too impotent to have the least hopes of success, we were forced to furrender; and accordingly were all carried prisoners into the port of Sallee. Our men were fent to the Emperor's court to be fold there; but the pirate captain taking notice of me, kept me to be his own flave.

In this condition, I thought myself the most miserable creature on earth, and the prophecy of my father came afresh into my thoughts. However, my condition was better than I thought it to be, as will soon appear. Some hopes indeed I had that my new patron would go to fea again, where he might be taken by a Spanish or Portuguese man of war, and then I should be set at liberty. But in this I was mistaken; for he never took me with him, but left me to look after his little garden, and do the drudgery of his house, and when he returned from sea, would make me lie in the cabin, and look after the ship. I had no one that I could communicate my thoughts to, which were continually meditating my escape; no Englishman, Irishman, or Scotchman here, but myself; and for two years I could fee nothing practicable, but only pleased my-

felf with the imagination. After some length of time, my patron, as I found, grew fo poor that he could not fit out his ship as usual: and then he used constantly, once or twice a week, if the weather was fair, to go out a fishing, taking me and a young Moresco boy to row the boat; and so much pleased was he with me for my dexterity in catching the fish, that he would often fend me with a Moor, who was one of his kinfmen, and the Moresco youth, to catch a dish of fish for him.

One morning, as we were at the sport, there arose such.

mo lan the fha the ftat pla oth loc fho tim hin fus

Ipo

the

and

tro

a th

kne

cer ord on he and inte har bee ma Mo ing agr far

tho in (lea ten and me

efc

wh faic a thick fog, that we lost fight of the shore; and rowing we knew not which way, we laboured all the night, and in the morning found ourselves in the ocean, two leagues from land. However, we attained there at length, and made the greater haste, because our stomachs were exceedingly sharp and hungry. In order to prevent such disasters for the suture, my patron ordered a carpenter to build a little state-room or cabin in the middle of the long-boat, with a place behind it to steer and hale home the main-sheet, with other conveniences to keep him from the weather, as also lockers to put in all manner of provisions, with a handsome shoulder of mutton sail, gibing over the cabin.

In this he frequently took us out a fishing; and one time inviting two or three persons of distinction to go with him, made provision extraordinary, providing also three sufferes with powder and shot, that they might have some sport at sowling along the sea-coast. The next morning the boat was made clean, her ancient and pendants out, and every thing ready; but their minds altering, my patron ordered us to go a sishing, for that his guests would

certainly sup with him that night.

And now I began to think of my deliverance indeed. In order to this I persuaded the Moor to get some provisions on board, as not daring to meddle with our patron's; and he taking my advice, we stored ourselves with rusk biscuit, and three jars of water. Besides, I privately conveyed into the boat a bottle of brandy, some twine, thread, a hammer, hatchet, and a saw; and, in particular, some bees-wax, which was a great comfort to me, and served to make candles. I then persuaded Muley (for so was the Moor called) to procure some powder and shot, pretending to kill sea curlieus, which he innocently and readily agreed to. In short, being provided with all things necessary, we sailed out, resolving for my own part to make my escape, though it should cost me my life.

When we had passed the castle, we fell to fishing; but though I knew there was a bite, I dissembled the matter, in order to put further out to sea. Accordingly we ran a league further: when giving the boy the helm, and pretending to stoop for something, I seized Muley by surprise, and threw him overboard. As he was an excellent swimmer, he soon arose, and made towards the boat; upon which, I took out a susee, and presented at him: "Muley," said I, "I never yet designed to do you any harm, and

A 6

two
in's
forour
by
ke,
or

was and red po-

ore-

and

nto or's

ble me vas me fea

But m, id-

ich an, wo

ew en

y-

oith of-

nd ch.

fed

hin

the

de

rol

one

fee

fee

tel

gui

fre

vag

tak

wh

mi

fer

inc

fai

66

of

ry

ter

the

bo

try

gr

va

pe

m

Wa

lou

pr

to

ter

ou

WE

in

C

fti

to

us

" feek nothing now but my redemption. I know you are able enough to swim to shore, and save your life; but if you are resolved to follow me, to the endangering of mine, the very moment you proceed, I will shoot you through the head." The harmless creature, at these words, turned himself from me, and I make no doubt got safe to land. Then turning to the boy Xury, I perceived he trembled at the action; but I put him out of all fear, telling him, that if he would he true and faithful to me, I would do well by him. "And therefore," said I, "you must stroke your face to be faithful; and, as the Turks have learned you, swear by Mahomet, and the beard of your father, or else I will throw you into the sea also." So innocent did the child then look, and with such an obliging smile consented, that I readily believed him, and

from that day forward began to love him entirely. We then pursued our voyage; and lest they should think me gone to the Strait's mouth, I kept to the fouthward to the truly Barbarian coast; but, in the dusk of the evening, I changed my course, and steering directly S. and by E. that I might keep near the shore; and having a fresh gale of wind, with a pleasant smooth sea, by three o'clock next day I was one hundred and fifty miles beyond the Emperor of Morocco's dominions. Yet still having the dreadful apprehension of being retaken, I continued failing for five days successively, till such time as the wind shifting to the fouthward, made me conclude, that if any veffel was in the chase of me, they would proceed no farther. After so much fatigue and thought, I anchored at the mouth of a little river, I knew not what, or where; neither did I then fee any people. What I principally wanted was fresh water; and I was resolved about dusk to swim ashore. But no sooner did the gloomy clouds of night begin to fucceed the declining day, when we heard fuch barking, roaring, and howling of wild creatures, that one might have thought the very strongest monsters of nature, or infernal spirits, had there residence there. Poor Xury, almost dead with fear, entreated me not to go on shore that night. "Supposing I don't, Xury," said I, " and in the " morning we should see men who are worse than those we " fear, what then?" " O den we may give dem de shoot " gun," replied Xury, laughing, " and de gun make dem " all run away." The wit, and broken English which the boy had learned among the captives of our nation, pleafed me entirely; and, to add to his cheerfulness, I gave him a dram of the bottle: we could get but little sleep all the night for those terrible howlings they made; and, indeed, we were both very much affrighted, when, by the rollings of the water, and other tokens, we justly concluded one of these monsters made towards our boat. I could not see till it came within two oars length, when taking my suffee, I let fly at him. Whether I hit him or no, I cannot tell; but he made towards the shore, and the noise of my gun increased the stupendous noise of the monsters.

The next morning I was refolved to go on shore to get fresh water, and venture my life among the beasts or savages, should either attack me. Xury said, he would take one of the jars, and bring me some. I asked him why he would go, and not I? The poor boy answered, " If wild mans come, they eat me, you go away." A mind scarcely now to be imitated, so contrary to self-prefervation, the most powerful law of nature! This indeed increased my affection to the child. "Well, dear Xury," faid I, " we will both go ashore, both kill wild mans, and "they shall eat neither of us." So giving Xury a piece of rulk bread to eat, and a dram, we waded ashore, carrying nothing with us but our arms, and two jars for water. I did not go out of fight of the boat, as dreading the favages coming down the river in their canoes; but the boy feeing a low descent or vale about a mile in the country, he wandered to it : and then running back to me with great precipitation, I thought he was pursued by some savage or wild beaft; upon which I approached, resolving to perish or protect him from danger. As he came nearer to me, I saw something hanging over his shoulders, which was a creature he had shot like a hare, but different in colour, and longer legs; however we were glad of it, for it proved wholesome and nourishing meat: but what added to our joy was, my boy affured me there was plenty of water, and that he fee no wild mans. And greater still was our comfort, when we found fresh water in the creek where we were when the tide was out, without going fo far up into the country.

In this place I began to confider that the Canary and Cape de Verde islands lay not far off; but having no infirument, I knew not what latitude, or when to stand off to sea for them; yet my hopes were, I should meet some of the English trading vessels, who would relieve and take

us in.

are

but

g of

you

hele

got

ved

ear,

e, I

you irks

of o."

an

and

ink

d to

ng, E.

gale

ext

the

ing

ift-

ref-

ner.

the nei-

ited

vim

be-

rkght

in-

hat

the

we

lem

the

lea-

pro

obl

Ga

in

not

ifla

WO

"

on

we

but

and

Th

hel

wh

the

thi

tw

an

dri

to

to

off

ag

CO

tai

wh

do

fin

mi

Ito to

thi

rif

be

die

gr

me

be

a i

The place I was in was no doubt that wild country, inhabited only by a few, that lies between the Emperor of Morocco's dominions and the Negroes. It is filled with wild beafts, and the Moors use it for hunting chiefly. From this place I thought I saw the top of the mountain Teneriff in the Canaries: which made me try twice to attain it; but as often was I drove back, and so forced to

pursue my fortune along shore.

Early one morning we came to an anchor under a little point of land, but pretty high; and the tide beginning to flow, we lay ready to go further in. But Xury, whose youthful and penetrating eyes were sharper than mine, in a foft tone, defired me to keep far from land, lest we should be devoured. " For look yonder, mayter," faid he, " and see the dreadful monster fast asleep on de side of de " hill." Accordingly looking where he pointed, I espied a fearful monster indeed. It was a terrible great lion that lay on shore, covered as it were by a shade of a piece of the hill. "Xury," faid I, "you shall go on shore and kill him." But the boy looked amazed: " Me kill him!" fays he, " he eat me at one mouth:" meaning one mouthful. Upon which I bid him lie still, and charging my biggest gun with two flugs, and a good charge of powder, I took the best aim I could to shoot him through the head; but his leg lying over his nofe, the flug broke his knee bone. The lion awaking with the pain, got up, but foon fell down, giving the most hideous groan I ever heard: but taking my fecond piece, I shot him through the head, and then he lay struggling for life. Upon this Xury took heart and defired my leave to go on shore. "Go then," said I. Upon which, taking a little gun in one hand, he swam to shore with the other, and coming close to the lion, put a period to his life, by shooting him again through the

But this was spending our ammunition in vain, the sless not being good to eat. Xury was like a champion, and comes on board for a hatchet, to cut off the head of his enemy; but not having strength to perform it, he cut off and brought me a foot. I bethought me however that his skin would be of use. This work cost Xury and me a whole day; when spreading it on the top of our cabin, the hot beams of the sun effectually dried it in two days time, and it afterwards served me for a bed to lie on.

And now we failed foutherly, living sparingly on our

in-

or of

with

efly.

itain

e to

d to

ittle

g to

hole

in a

he,

f de

ed a

the

m."

he,

ful.

gest

ook but

ne.

fell

but

and

eart

d I.

to

it a

the

esh

and

his

off

his

ole

hot

ind

our

provisions, and went no oftener on shore than we were obliged for fresh water. My design was to make the river Gambia or Senegal, or any where about the Cape de Verde, in hopes to meet some European ship. If Providence did not so favour me, my next course was to seek for the islands, or lose my life among the Negroes. And in a word, I put my whole stress upon this, "Either that I must meet with some ship, or certainly perish."

One day as we were failing along, we faw people stand on the shore looking at us; we could also perceive they were black and flark naked. I was inclined to go on shore, but Xury cried, " No no;" however, I approached nearer, and I found they run along the shore by me a good way. They had no weapons in their hands, except one, who held a long stick, which Xury told me was a lance, with which they could kill at a great distance. I talked to them by figns, and made them sensible I wanted something to eat; they beckoned me to stop my boat, while two of them ran up into the country, and in less than half an hour came back, and brought with them two pieces of dried flesh, and some corn, which we kindly accepted; and to prevent any fears on either fide, they brought the food to the shore, laid it down, then went and stood a great way off till we fetched it on board, and then came close to us again.

But while we were returning thanks to them, being all we could afford, two mighty creatures came from the mountains; one as it were pursuing the other with great fury, which we were the rather inclined to believe, as they feldom appear but in the night; and both these swiftly passing by the Negroes, jumped into the sea, wantonly swimming about, as they the diversion of the waters had put a stop to their sierceness. At last one of them coming nearer to my boat than I expected or desired, I shot him directly through the head; upon which he sunk immediately, yet rising again, would have willingly made to the shore; but between the wound and the strangling of the water, he

died before he could reach it.

It is impossible to express the consternation the poor Negroes were in at the siring of my gun; much less can I mention their surprize, when they perceived the creature to be slain by it. I made signs to them to draw near it with a rope, and then gave it to them to hale on shore. It was a beautiful leopard, which made me desire its skin: and the

Negroes feeming to covet the carcafe, I freely gave it to them. As for the other leopard, it made to shore, and ran with a prodigious swiftness out of sight. The Negroes having kindly furnished me with water, and with what roots and grains their country afforded, I took my leave, and, after eleven days fail, came in fight of the Cape de Verde, and those islands called by its name. But the great distance I was from it, and fearing contrary winds would prevent my reaching them, I began to grow melancholy and dejected, when, upon a sudden, Xury cried out, " Ma-" fter! Master! a ship with a fail!" and looked as affrighted as if it was his master's ship sent in search of us. But I foon discovered she was a Portuguese ship, as I thought, bound to the coast of Guinea for Negroes. Upon which I strove for life to come up to them. But vain had it been, if through their perspective glasses they had not perceived me, and shortened their fail to let me come up. Encouraged at this, I fet up my patron's ancient, and fired a gun, both as fignals of distress; upon which they very kindly lay to, fo that in three hours time I came up with them. They spoke to me in Portuguese, Spanish, and French, but neither of these did I understand; till at length a Scots failor called, and then I told him I was an Englishman, who had escaped from the Moors at Sallee; upon which they took me kindly on board, with all my effects.

Surely none can express the inconceivable joy I felt at this happy deliverance! who, from being a late miserable and forlorn creature, was not only relieved, but in favour with the master of the ship, to whom, in return for my deliverance, I offered all I had. "God forbid," faid he, " that I should take any thing from you. Every thing " shall be delivered to you when you come to Brazil. lf. "I have faved your life, it is no more than I should ex-" pect to receive myself from any other, when in the same " circumstances, I should happen to meet the like deliver-" ance. And should I take from you what you have, and " leave you at Brazil, why, this would be only taking " away a life I had given. My charity teaches me bet-" ter. Those effects you have will support you there, and " provide you a passage home again," And, indeed, he acted with the strictest justice in what he did, taking my things into his possession, and giving me an exact inventory, even to my earthen jars. He bought my boat of me

to

es at

e, de at ld

ly

af-

I on ad ot

p.

p d at in ;

le :

g lf

e

d

g d e

y c

Robinson Crusoc and his boy Xury on the Coast of Guinea shooting a Lyon

ag his the two tre paid this ed, about term till pla and fire rem neft rem ver

8 SE 74

SEU

for eig he my vai fai

pied now the my only tain reg had

for we

con illa of v ful

A

be

dur

for the ship's use, giving me a note of eighty pieces of eight, payable at Brazil; and if any body offered more, he would make it up. He also gave me sixty pieces for my boy Xury. It was with great reluctance I was prevailed upon to sell the child's liberty, who had served me so faithfully; but the boy was willing himself; and it was agreed, that after ten years he should be made free, upon his renouncing Mahometanism, and embracing Christianity.

Having a pleasant voyage to the Brazils, we arrived in the Bay de Todos los Santos, or All Saints Bay, in twenty-two days after. And here I cannot forget the generous treatment of the captain. He would take nothing for my passage, gave me twenty ducats for the leopard's skin; and thirty for the lion's. Every thing he caused to be delivered, and what I would sell he bought. In short, I made about 220 pieces of my cargo; and with this stock I entered once more, as I may say, into the scene of life.

Being recommended to a honest planter, I lived with him till such time as I was informed of the manner of their planting and making sugar; and seeing how well they lived, and how suddenly they grew rich, I was filled with a defire to settle among them, and resolved to get my money

remitted to me, and to purchase a plantation.

To be brief, I bought a settlement next door to an honest and kind neighbour, born at Lisbon, of English parents, whose plantation joining to mine, we improved it very amicably together. Both our stocks were low, and for two years we planted only for food: but the third year we planted some tobacco, and each of us dressed a large piece of ground the ensuing year for planting canes. But now I found how much I wanted assistance, and repented

Having none to assist me, my father's words came into my mind: and I used to ask myself, if what I sought was only a middle station of life, why could it not as well be obtained in England as here? when I pondered on this with regret, the thoughts of my late deliverance for sook me. I had none to converse with but my neighbour; no work to be done but by my own hands; it often made me say, my condition was like to that of a man cast upon a desolate island. So unhappy are we in our restlections, so forgetful of what good things we receive ourselves, and so untnankful for our deliverance from those calamities that others endure.

kin

frie

to

to

fail

yea

ed

we

the

we

ifla

ter

ly,

In

a t

up

tuc

hii

mi

we

wa

the

the

of

ing

me

pe

kn

ha

W

ex

at

in

an

fic

te

W

tic

PC

I was in some measure settled, before the captain, who took me up, departed from the Brazils. One day I went to him, and told him what stock I had in London, desiring his assistance in getting it remitted; to which the good gentleman readily consented, but would only have me send for half my money, lest it should miscarry; which, if it did, I might still have the remainder to support me: and so taking letters of procuration from me, bid me trouble myself no farther about it.

And, indeed, wonderful was his kindness towards me; for he not only procured the money I had drawn for upon my captain's widow, but sent me over a servant with a cargo proportionable to my condition. He also sent me over tools of all forts, iron-work, and utensils necessary for my plantation, and which proved of the greatest use to

me in my business.

Wealth now accumulating on me, and uncommon fuccels crowning my prosperous labours, I might have rested happy in that middle state of life my father had so often recommended; yet nothing would content me, such was my evil genius, but I must leave this happy station, for a foolish ambition in rising; and thus, once more, I cast myfelf into the greatest gulph of misery that ever poor creature fell into. Having lived four years in Brazil, I had not only learned the language, but contracted acquaintance with the most eminent planters, and even the merchants of St. Salvadore; to whom, once, by way of difcourse, having given account of my two voyages to the coast of Guinea, and the manner of trading there for mere trifles, by which we furnish our plantations with Negroes, they gave such attention to what I said, that three of them came one morning to me, and told me they had a fecret proposal to make. After enjoining me to secrecy (it being an infringement on the powers of the kings of Portugal and Spain) they told me they had a mind to fit out a ship to go to Guinea, in order to stock the plantation with Negroes, which, as they could not be publicly fold, they would divide among them; and if I would go their supercargo in the ship, to manage the trading part, I hould have an equal share of the Negroes, without providing any The thing indeed was fair enough, had I been in another condition. But I, born to be my own destroyer, could not refift the proposal, but accepted the offer, upon condition of their looking after my plantation. So making a formal will, I bequeathed my effects to my good friend the captain, as my universal heir; but obliged him to dispose of my effects as directed, one half of the produce

to himself, and the other to be shipped to England.

ho

to

ng

en-

for

id,

fo

y-

e;

on

1a

ne

ry

to

C-

ed

en

as

2

y-

a-

ad

it-

T-

if-

he

or

e-

ee:

a

it

r-

a

th

ey

r-

ld

ly

in

r,

n

1-

The ship being fitted out, and all things ready, we set fail the first of September 1659, being the same day eight years I left my father and mother in Yorkshire. We failed northward upon the coast, in order to gain Africa, till we made Cape Augustine; from whence going farther into the ocean, out of fight of land, we steered as though we were bound for the isle Fernand de Norenba, leaving the islands on the east; and then it was that we met with a terrible tempest, which continued for twelve days successively, fo that the winds carried us wherefoever they pleafed. In this perplexity one of our men died, and one man and a boy were washed overboard. When the weather cleared up a little, we found ourselves eleven degrees north latitude, upon the coast of Guinea. Upon this the captain gave reasons for returning; which I opposed, counselling him to stand away for Barbadoes, which, as I supposed, might be attained in fifteen days. So altering our course, we failed north-west and by west, in order to reach the Leeward islands; but a second storm succeeding, drove us to the westward: so that we were justly afraid of falling into the hands of cruel favages, or the paws of devouring beafts of prey.

In this great diffress, one of our men, early in the morning cried out, " Land, land!" which he had no fooner cried out, but our ship struck upon a sand bank, and in a moment the fea broke over her in fuch a manner, that we expected we should all have perished immediately. knew nothing where we were, or upon what land we were driven; whether an island or the main, inhabited or not inhabited; and we could not so much as hope that the ship would hold out many minutes, without breaking in pieces, except the wind by a miracle should turn about immediately. While we stood looking at one another, expecting death every moment, the mate lays hold of the boat, and with the help of the rest got her slung over the ship's fide, and getting all into her, being eleven of us, committed ourselves to God's mercy, and the wild sea. And now we saw that this last effort would not be a sufficient protection from death; so high did the sea rise, that it was impossible the boat should live. As to making fail, we had

none; neither if we had, could we make use of any. that when we had rowed, or rather were driven about a league and a half, a raging wave, like a lofty mountain, came rolling a-stern of us, and took us with such fury, that at once it overfet the boat. Thus being swallowed up in a moment, we had hardly time to call upon the tremendous name of God; much less to implore, in dying ejaculations,

his infinite mercy to receive our departing fouls.

Men are generally counted infenfible, when struggling in the pangs of death; but while I was overwhelmed with water, I had the most dreadful apprehensions imaginable. For the joys of heaven and the torments of hell, feemed to prefent themselves before me in these dying agonies, and even small space of time, as it were, between life and I was going, I thought, I knew not whither, into r dismal gulph unknown, and as yet unperceived, never to behold my friends, nor the light of this world any more! Could I even have thought of annihilation, or a total diffolution of foul as well as body, the gloomy thoughts of having no further being, no knowledge of what we hoped for, but an eternal quietus, without life or sense: even that, I fay, would have been enough to strike me with horror and confusion! I strove, however, to the last extremity, while all my companions were overpowered and entombed in the deep: and it was with great difficulty I kept my breath till the wave spent itself, and retiring back, left me on the shore half dead with the water I had taken in. foon as I got on my feet, I ran as fast as I could, lest another wave should pursue me, and carry me back again. But, for all the haste I made, I could not avoid it: for the fea came after me like a high mountain, or furious enemy; fo that my business was to hold my breath, and by raising The next myself on the water, preserve it by swimming. dreadful wave buried me at once twenty or thirty feet deep, but at the same time carried me with a mighty force and swiftness toward the shore; when raising myself, I held out as well as possible, till at length the water having spent itfelf, began to return, at which I struck forward, and feeling ground with my feet, I took to my heels again. Thus being served twice more, I was at length dashed against a piece of a rock, in such a manner as left me senseles; but recovering a little before the return of the wave, which, no doubt, would then have overwhelmed me, I held fast by the rock till those succeeding waves abated; and then setching foor I re of t free

I

my prie and tion hun gan and ple and to d felf kni The fear plui of I thar to f grea ger fo t

> whe the whi abo dow fhip shor to h mile

> that

I

war imn caln it w boa ing another run, was overtaken by a small wave, which was foon conquered. But before any more could overtake me, I reached the main land, where clambering up the clifts of the shore, tired and almost spent I sat down on the grass,

free from the dangers of the foaming ocean.

So

. 2

ın,

nat

n a

us.

ns,

in

th

le.

ed

nd

nd

to

to

e!

if-

of.

ed

at,

or

y,

ed

ny

ne

As

0-

in.

he

y ;

ng

xt

p,

nd

ut

it-

el-

US

a

ut

no

by

4-

No tongue can express the ecstasies and transports that my foul felt at the happy deliverance. It was like a reprieve to a dying malefactor, with the halter about his neck, and ready to be turned off. I was wrapt up in contemplation, and often lifted up my hands, with the profoundest humility, to the divine powers, for faving my life, when the rest of my companions were all drowned. And now I began to cast my eyes around, to behold what place I was in, and what I had next to do. I could fee no house nor people: I was wet, yet had no clothes to shift me; hungry and thirsty, yet had nothing to eat or drink; no weapon to destroy any creature for my sustenance, nor defend myfelf against devouring beasts; in short, I had nothing but a knife, a tobacco-pipe, and a box half filled with tobacco. The darksome night coming on upon me, increased my fears of being devoured by wild creatures; my mind was plunged in despair, and having no prospect, as I thought, of life before me, I prepared for another kind of death than what I had lately escaped. I walked about a furlong to see if I could find any fresh water, which I did, to my great joy: and taking a quid of tobacco to prevent hunger, I got up in a thick bushy tree, and seating myself so that I could not fall, a deep sleep overtook me, and for that night buried my forrows in a quiet repole.

It was broad day the next morning before I awaked; when I not only perceived the tempest was ceased, but saw the ship driven almost as far as the rock before-mentioned, which the wayes had dashed me against, and which was about a mile from the place where I was. When I came down from my apartment in the tree, I perceived the ship's boat two miles distant on my right hand, lying on shore, as the waves had cast her. I thought to have got to her; but there being an inlet of water of about half a mile's breadth between it and me, I returned again towards the ship, as hoping to find something for my more immediate subsistence. About noon, when the sea was calm, that I could come within a quarter of a mile of her, it was to my grief I perceived, that, if we had kept on board, all our lives had been saved. These thoughts, and

th

J

ca

po

fw

w

or

the

me

fet

Wa

the

fir

lar

on

my

a-1

ha

ke

int

cat

Wit

the

Suc

TOU

vec

was

felf

afce

ifla

but

be :

wild

ran

one

icre

cold

Was

whi

Cru

flep

and

my solitude, drew tears from my eyes, though all in vain. So resolving to get to the ship, I stripped and leaped into the water, when swimming round her I was afraid I should not get any thing to lay hold of; but it was my good fortune to espy a small piece of rope hang down by the forechains, so low that, by the help of it, though with great difficulty, I got into the forecastle of the ship. Here I found that the ship was bulged, and had a great deal of water in her hold; her stern was listed up against a bank, and her head almost to the water. All her quarter, and what was there, was free and dry. The provisions I sound in good order, with which I crammed my pockets; and losing no time, ate while I was doing other things; I also sound some rum, of which I took a hearty dram; and now I wanted for nothing except a boat, which indeed was all,

to carry away what was needful for me.

Necessity occasions quickness of thought. We had feveral spare yards, a spare topmast or two, and two or three large spars of wood. With these I fell to work, and flung as many of them overboard as I could manage, tying every one of them with a rope that they might not drive away. This done, I went down to the ship's side, and tied four of them fast together at both ends, in form of a raft, and laying two or three short pieces of plank upon them crosswife, I found it would bear me, but not any confiderable weight. Upon which I went to work again, cutting a spare topmast into three lengths, adding them to my raft with a great deal of labour and pains. I then confidered what I should load it with, it being not able to bear a ponderous burden. And this I foon thought of first laying upon it all the planks and boards I could get; next I lowered down three of the seamen's chests, after I had filled them with bread, rice, three Dutch cheeses, five pieces of dried goat's flesh, and some European corn, what little the rats had spared; and for liquors, I found several cases of bottles belonging to our skipper, in which were fome cordial waters, and four or five gallons of rack, which I stowed by themselves. By this time the tide beginning to flow, I perceived my coat, waistcoat, and shirt fwim away, which I had left on the shore; as for my lineabreeches and stockings, I swam with them on to the ship but I foon found clothes enough, though I took no more than I wanted for the present. My eyes were chiefly on tools to work with; and, after a long fearch, I found ou

the carpenter's cheft, which I got fafe down on my raft. I then looked for arms and ammunition, and in the great cabin found two good fowling pieces, two pistols, several powder horns filled, a small bag of shot, and two old rusty swords. I likewise found three barrels of powder, two of which were good, but the third had taken water, also two or three broken oars, two faws, an ax, and a hammer. then put to sea, and in getting to shore had three encouragements. 1. A smooth calm sea. 2. The tide rising and fetting in to shore. 3. The little wind there was blew towards the land. After I had failed about a mile, I found the raft to drive a little distance from the place where I first landed; and then I perceived a little opening of the land, with a strong current of the tide running into it : upon which I kept the middle of the stream. But great was my concern, when on a sudden the forepart of my raft ran a-ground; so that had I not, with great difficulty, for near half an hour, kept my back straining against the chests to keep my effects in the places, all I had would have gone into the sea. But after some time, the rising of the water caused the raft to float again, and coming up a little river with land on both fides, I landed in a little cave, as near the mouth as possible, the better to discover a fail, if any fuch providentially passed that way.

Not far off, I espied a hill of stupendous height, surrounded with lesser hills about it, and thither I was resolved to go and view the country, that I might see what part was best to six my habitation. Accordingly, arming mysels with a pistol, a sowling-piece, powder, and ball, I ascended the mountain. There I perceived I was in an island, encompassed by the sea; no distant lands to be seen but scattering rocks that lay to the west: that it seemed to be a barren place, and, as I thought, inhabited only by wild beasts. I perceived abundance of sowls, but ignorant of what kind, or whether good for nourishment, I shot one of them at my return, which occasioned a consused screaming among the other birds, and I sound it, by its colours and beak, to be a kind of a hawk, but its slesh

was perfect carrion.

vain.

into

ould

for-

ore-

great

ere I

fwa-

and

what

nd in

ofing

ound

low I

s all,

d fe-

vo or

, and

, ty-

it not

, and

ofa

upon

t any

gain,

em to

then

ble to

ht of,

get;

fter l

s, five

what

everal

1 were

rack

de be-

(hirt

linen-

thip

more

efly on

nd ou

When I came to my raft, I brought my effects on shore, which work spent that day entirely; and fearing that some cruel beasts might devour me in the night-time while I slept, I made a kind of hut or barricade with the chests and boards I had brought on shore. That night I slept

very comfortably; and the next morning my thoughts were employed to make a further attempt on the ship, and bring away what necessaries I could find, before another form should break her to pieces. Accordingly I got on board as before, and prepared a fecond raft, far more nice than the first; upon which I brought away the carpenter's stores, two or three bags full of nails, a great jack-screw, a dozen or two of hatchets, and a grindstone. I also took away several things that belonged to the gunner, particularly two or three iron crows, two barrels of musketbullets, another fowling piece, a small quantity of powder, and a large bag full of small shot. Besides these, I took all the men's clothes I could find, a spare foretop-sail, a hammock, and fome bedding; and thus completing my fecond cargo, I made all the hafte to shore I could, fearing some wild beast might destroy what I had there already. But I only found a little wild cat fitting on one of the chefts, which not feeming to fear me, or the gun that I presented at her, I threw her a piece of biscuit, which she instantly ate, and departed.

When I had gotten these effects on shore, I went to work in order to make mea little tent with the sail and some poles which I had cut for that purpose; and having sinished it, what things might be damaged by the weather I brought in, piling all the empty chests and casks in a circle, the better to sortify it against any sudden attempt of man or beast. After this, I blocked up the doors with some boards, and an empty chest turned the long way out. I then charged my gun and pistol, and laying my bed on the ground, slept as comfortably, till next morning, as though

I had been in a Christian country.

Now, though I had enough to subsist me a long time, yet despairing of a sudden deliverance, or that both ammunition and provision might be spent before such thing happened, I coveted as much as I could; and so long as the ship remained in that condition, I daily brought away one necessary or other; particularly the rigging, sails, and cordage, some twine, a barrel of wet powder, some sugar, a barrel of meal, three casks of rum, and, what indeed was most welcome to me, a whole hogshead of bread.

The next time I went I cut the cables in pieces, carried off a hawfer whole, with a great deal of iron work, and made anothe raft with the mizen and sprit-sail-yard; but his being so unwieldy, by the too heavy burden I had upon

ughts, and other of on nice nter's crew, alfo par-iket-vder, took il, a g my fearady. nefts, ented

vork
poles
d it,
ught
the

ome . In the

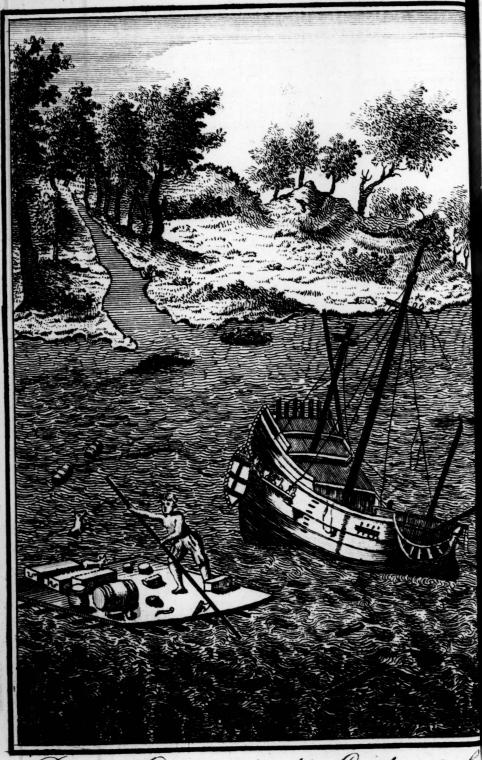
ime,

am-hing g as way and

gar, leed

ried and but

pon



Robinson Crusoe saving his Goods out of the Wreck of his Ship

form part, water bles, T time

time I be brou goin I ve lock kniv piec faid "th

" if
" if
" if
" h
" t

male to a ove in v abo

> mo pri no ou en

the and fold

I

it, and not being able so dexterously to guide it, as the former, both my cargo and I were overturned. For my part, all the damage I sustained was a wet skin; and, at low water, after much labour in diving, I got most of the ca-

bles, and some pieces of iron.

Thirteen days had I now been in the island, and eleven times on board, bringing away all that was possible; and, I believe, had the weather been calm, I should have brought away the whole ship, piece by piece. As I was going the twelfth time, the wind began to rife; however, I ventured at low water, and rummaging the cabin, in a locker I found several razors, scissors, and some dozens of knives and forks; and in another thirty-fix pounds in pieces of eight, filver and gold. "Ah! fimple vanity," faid I, "whom this world fo much dotes on, where is now "thy virtue, thy excellency to me? You cannot procure " me one thing needful, nor remove me from this desolate " island to a place of plenty. One of these knives, so " meanly esteemed, is to me more preferable than all this "heap. E'en therefore remain where thou art, to fink in " the deep as unregarded, even as a creature whose life is "not worth preferving." Yet, after all this exclamation, I wrapt it up in a piece of canvas, and began to think of making another raft; but I foon perceived the wind began to arise, a fresh gale blowing from the shore, and the sky overcast with clouds and darkness; so, thinking a rast to be in vain, I let myself into the water with what things I had about me, and it was with much difficulty I got ashore, when foon after it blew a fearful storm.

That night I slept very contentedly in my little tent, surrounded with all my effects; but when I looked out in the morning no more ship was to be seen. This much surprised me for the present: yet, when I considered I had lost no time, abated no pains, and had got every thing useful out of her, I comforted myself in the best manner, and

entirely submitted to the will of Providence.

My next thoughts were, how I should defend and secure myself from savages and wild beasts, if any such were in the island. At one time I thought of digging a cave, at another I was for erecting a tent; and, at length, I resolved to do both: The manner or form of which will not, I hope, be unpleasing to describe.

When I confidered the ground where I was, that it was moorish, and had no fresh water near it, my resolutions

were to fearch for a foil healthy and well watered, where I might not only be sheltered from the sun's scorching heat, but be more conveniently situated, as well to be secured from wild men, and beasts of prey, as more easily to dif-

cover any distant sail, should it ever so happen.

And, indeed, it was not long before I had my defire. I found a little plain near a rifing hill, the front towards which being as steep as a house side, nothing could descend on me from the top. On the fide of this rock was a little hollow place, refembling the entrance or door of a cave. Just before this place, on the circle of the green, I re-This plain, did not much exfolved my tent should stand. ceed a hundred yards broad, and about twice as long, like a delightful green before my door, with a pleasing, though an irregular descent every way to the low grounds by the fea fide, lying on the N. W. fide of the hill, fo that it was sheltered from the excessive heat of the sun. After this, I drew a femi-circle, containing ten yards in a femi-diameter, and twenty yards in the whole, driving down two rows of strong stakes, not fix inches from each other. Then with the pieces of cable which I had cut on board, I regularly laid them in a circle between the piles up to their tops, which were more than five feet out of the earth, and after drove another row of piles looking within fide against them, between two or three feet high, which made me conclude it a little impregnable castle against men and beafts. And for my better fecurity I would have no door, but entered in and came out by the help of a ladder, which I also made.

Here was my fence and fortress, into which I carried all my riches, ammunition, and stores. After which, working on the rock, what with dirt and stones I dug out, I not only raised my ground two feet, but made a little cellar to my mansion-house; and this cost me many days labour and pains. One day in particular a shower of rain falling, thunder and lightening enfued, which put me in terror left my powder should take fire, and not only hinder my neceffary subfishence, by killing me food, but even blow up me and my habitation. To prevent which, I fell to making boxes and bags, in order to separate it, having by me near 150lb. weight. And thus being established as king of the island, every day I went out with my gun to see what I could kill that was fit to eat. I foon perceived numbers of goats, but very shy, yet having watched them narrowly, and feeing I could better shoot off the rocks than when in

her the the ali

the

ma ing WO Iv Ye me poi you riff def life in e fub the Ab rec for upo fim san wit Sal the Ik of t I d par ma pen pai

gla

iev

He.

two

my

iari

the low grounds, I happened to shoot a she-goat suckling a young kid; which not thinking its dam slain, stood by her unconcerned; and when I took the dead creature up, the young one followed me even to the inclosure. I listed the kid over the pales, and would willingly have kept it alive; but finding it could not be brought to eat, I was

forced to flay it also for my subfistence.

1

1

Thus entered into as strange a scene of life as ever any man was in, I had most melancholy apprehensions concerning my deplorable condition: and many times the tears would plentifully run down my face, when I confidered how I was debarred from all communication with human kind. Yet while these desponding cogitations would seem to make me accuse Providence, other good thoughts would interpose and reprove me after this manner: Well, supposing you are desolate, is it not better to be so than totally perish? Why were you singled out to be saved, and the rest destroyed? Why should you complain, when not only your life is preserved, but the ship driven even into your reach, in order to take what was necessary out of her for your subfishence? But to proceed. It was, by the account I kept, the 30th of September, when I first landed on this island. About twelve days after, fearing left I should lose my reckoning of time, nay, even forget the Sabbath days, for want of pen, ink, and paper, I carved with a knife upon a large post, in great letters, and set it up, in the fimilitude of a cross, on the sea shore where I landed, I same on shore, Sept. 30, 1659. Every day I cut a notch with my knife on the fides of this square post, and that on the Sabbath was as long again as the rest; and every first day of the month as long again as that long one. In this manner I kept my calendar, weekly, monthly, or yearly reckoning of time. But had I made a more strict search (as afterwards I did) I needed not have fet up this mark; for among the parcels belonging to the gunner, carpenter, and captain's mate, I found those very things I wanted; particularly pens, ink, and paper; also I found two or three compasses, some mathematical instruments, dials, perspective glasses, books of navigation, three English Bibles, and feveral other good books, which I carefully put up.-Here I cannot but call to mind our having a dog and two cats on board, whom I made inhabitants with me in my castle. Though one might think I had all the necesfaries that were defirable, yet still I found several things

wanting. My ink was daily wasting: I wanted needles, pins, and thread to mend or keep my clothes together; and particularly a spade, pickax, or shovel, to remove the earth. It was a year before I finished my little bulwark; and having some intervals of relaxation, after my daily wandering abroad for provision, I drew up this plan, alternately, as creditor and debtor, to remind me of the miferies and blessings of my life, under so many various circumstances.

EVIL.

I am cast upon a desolate island, having no hopes, no prospect of a welcome deliverance.

How miserably am I singled out from the enjoyment or company of all mankind.

Like an hermit (rather should I say a lonely anchorite) am I forced from human conversation.

My clothes after some time will be worn out: and then I shall have none to cover me.

When my ammunition is wasted, then shall I remain without any defence against wild men and beasts.

I have no creature, no foul to speak to: none to beg assistance from. Some comfort would it be to resound my woes where I am understood, and beg assistance where I might hope for relief.

GOOD.

But yet I am preserved, while my companions are perished in the raging ocean.

Yet set apart to be spared from death. And he, who has so preserved me, can deliver me from this condition.

However, I have food to eat, and even a happy prospect of subsistence whilst life endures.

At present I enjoy what is absolutely needful: and the climate is so hot, that had I never so many, I should hardly wear them.

Yet if it does, I see no danger of any hurt to me, as in Africa: And what if I had been cast away upon that coast.

Is there not God to converse to, and is not he able to relieve thee? Already has he afforded thee sustenance, and put it in thy power to provide for thyself till he sends thee a deliver-

And now easing my mind a little by these reslections, I

I must here add, to the description I have given of my habitation, that having raised a turf-wall against the outside of it, I thatched it so close, as might keep it from the inclemency of the weather; I also improved it within, enlarged my cave, and made a passage and door in the rock, which came out beyond the pale of my fortification. I next

flud Wh with and yet out shell and This fult and accommodition

Sillar com The cum flar fava

C

the floring necessary men leavelie de wea

mak fhip C yet

the but fron les,

and

the

k;

al-

mi-

II-

bile

in

red

bas me

eat,

7 of

t is

cli-

ver

ear

anin

bad

aft.

er/e

eve

ded

in

by-

er-

, I

my

ut-

the

enck,

ext

5.

proceeded to make a chair and table, and so began to study such mechanical arts as seemed to me practicable. When I wanted a plank or board, I hewed down a tree with my hatchet, making it as thin with my ax as possible, and then smooth enough with an adz to answer my designs: yet though I could make no more this way than one board out of a tree, in length of time I got boards enough to shelter all my stores, every thing being regularly placed, and my guns securely hanging against the side of the rock. This made it a very pleasant sight to me, as being the result of vast labour and diligence: which leaving for a while, and me to the enjoyment of it, I shall give the reader an account of my Journal from the day of my landing, till the sixing and settling of my habitation, as heretofore shewn.

JOURNAL.

September 30th, 1659, I, unhappy Robinson Crusoe, having suffered shipwreck, was driven on this desolate Island, which I named the Desolate Island of Despair, my companions being swallowed up in the tempestuous ocean. The next day I spent in consideration of my unhappy circumstances, having no prospect but of death, either to be starved with hunger, or devoured with beasts or merciless savages.

Oct. 1. That morning, with great comfort, I beheld the ship drove ashore. Some hopes I had, that when the storm was abated, I might be able to get some food and necessaries out of her, which I conceived were not damaged, because the ship did stand upright. At this time I lamented the loss of my companions, and our missortune in leaving the vessel. When I perceived the ship as it were lie dry, I waded through the sands, then swam aboard, the weather being very rainy, and with scarcely any wind.

To the 14th of this month, my time was employed in making voyages, every tide getting what I could out of the ship. The weather very wet and uncertain.

Oct. 20. My raft and all the goods thereon were overfet;

yet I recovered most again at low water.

Oct. 25. It blew hard, and rained night and day, when the ship went in pieces, so that nothing was seen of her but the wreck at low water. This day I secured my goods from the inclemency of the weather.

th

ch

W

ci

ra

fl:

fi

31

fc

ta

a

W

d

W

tl

tl

C

2

tl

V

V

h

g

i

Oct 26. I wandered to see where I could find a place convenient for my abode. I fixed upon a rock in the evening, marked out a half-moon, intending to erect a wall, fortified with piles, lined within with pieces of cables, and covered with turf.

Nov. 1. I erected my tent under a rock, and took up my lodgings very contentedly in a hammock that night.

Nov. 2. This day I fenced myself in with timber, chests, and boards.

Nov. 3. I shot two wild fowl, refembling ducks, which were good to eat, and in the afternoon made me a table.

Nov. 4. I began to live regularly. In the morning I allowed myfelf two or three hours to walk out with my gun: I then worked till near eleven o'clock, and afterwards refreshed myself with what I had to eat. From twelve to two I would lie down to fleep. Extremely fultry weather. In the evening go to work again.

Nov. 5. Went out with my gun and dog, shot a wild cat with a soft skin, but her slesh was good for nothing. The skins of those I killed, I preserved. In my return, I perceived many wild birds, and was terrified by fome

feals which made off to fea.

Nov. 6. Completed my table.

Nov. 7. Fair weather. I worked till the 12th, but omitted the 11th, which, according to my calculation, I

supposed to be Sunday.

Nov. 13. Rain in abundance, which, however, much cooled the air; with thunder and lightening, caused in me a terrible furprife. The weather clearing, I fecured my powder in separate parcels.

Nov. 14-16. I made little boxes for my powder, lodging them in several places. I also shot a large fowl,

wnich proved excellent meat.

Nov. 17. I began to dig in the rock, yet was obliged to defift for want of a pickax, shovel, and wheelbarrow. Iron crows I caused to supply the place of the first; but

with all my art I could not make a wheelbarrow.

Nov. 18. It was my fortune to find a tree, refembling what Brazilians call an iron tree. I had like to have spoiled my ax with cutting it, being very hard and exceeding heavy; yet with much labour and industry, I made a fort of a spade out of it.

Nov. 23. These tools being made, I daily carried on my business; eighteen days I allowed for enlarging my cave, that it might ferve me, not only for a warehouse, but kitchen, parlour, and cellar. I commonly lay in the tent, auless the weather was rainy that I could not lie dry. So wet would it be at certain seasons, that I was obliged to cover all within the pale with long poles, in the form of rasters, leaning against the rock, and loaded them with slags and large leaves of trees, resembling a thatch.

Dec. 10. No sooner did I think my habitation finished, but suddenly a great deal of the top broke in, so that it was a mercy I was not buried in the ruins. This occa-fioned a great deal of pains and trouble to me, before I

could make it firm and durable.

Dec. 17. I nailed up some shelves and drove nails and staples in the wall and posts to hang things out of the way.

Dec. 20. Every thing I got into its place, then made a fort of a dreffer, and another table.

Dec. 24, 25. Rain in abundance.

Dec. 26. Very fair weather.

Dec. 27. I chanced to light on some goats, shot one, and wounded another. I led it home in a string, bound up its leg, and cured it in a little time: at length it became so tame and samiliar as to feed before the door, and sollow me where I pleased. This put me in mind to bring up tame creatures, in order to supply me with sood after my ammunition was spent.

Dec. 28, 29, 30. The weather being excessively hot, with little air, obliged me for the most part, to keep within

doors.

Jan. 1. Still fultry, however, obliged by necessity, I went out with my gun, and found a great store of goats in the valleys; they were exceedingly shy, nor could my dog hunt them down.

Jan. 3 to 14. My employment this time was to finish the wall before described, and search the island. I discovered a kind of pigeons like our house-pigeons in a nest among the rocks. I brought them home, nursed them till they could fly, and then they lest me. After this, I shot some, which proved excellent food. Some time I spent vainly in contriving to make a cask; I may well say it was vain, because I could neither joint the staves, nor fix the heads, so as to make it tight: So, leaving that, took some goat's tallow I had about me, and a little okum for the wick, and provided myself with a lamp, which served me instead of candles.

B 4

place evenwall, and k up

hich le. ng I

nt.

nefts,

fterrom fulwild

ing.

urn,

but

uch l in ired der,

ged ow. but

owl,

ling oilling fort

my ave,

at l

way

war

desi

eno

with

blet

ftar

arm

the

the

the

put

and

ear

sho

ror

the

me

to

dif

cu

Wa

ro

OV

rit

th

do

me

th

th

fe

to

0

But now a very strange event happened. For being in the height of my search, what should come into my hand, but a bag, which was used to hold corn (as I supposed) for the sowls; so immediately resolving to put gunpowder in it, I shook all the husks and dirt upon one side of the rock, little expecting what the consequence would be. The rain had fallen plentifully a sew days before; and about a month after, to my great amazement, something began to look out very green and slourishing; and when I came to view it more nicely, every day as it grew, I sound about ten or twelves ears of green barley appeared in the very same shape and make as that in England.

I can scarce express the agitations of my mind at this sight. Hitherto I had looked upon the actions of this life no otherwise than only as the events of blind chance and fortune. But now, the appearance of this barley, flourishing in a barren soil, and my ignorance in not conceiving how it should come there, made me conclude, that miracles were not yet ceased: nay, I even thought that God had appointed it to grow there without any seed, purely for my sustenance in this miserable and desolate island. And indeed such great effect this had upon me, that it often made me melt into tears, through a grateful sense of God's mercies; and the greater still was my thankfulness, when I perceived about this little field of barley some rice stalks, also wonderfully slourishing.

While thus pleased in mind, I concluded there must be more corn in the island; and therefore made a diligent search narrowly among the rocks: but not being able to find any, on a sudden it came into mind, how I had shaken the husks of corn out of the bag, and then my admiration ceased, with my gratitude to the Divine Being, as thinking it was but natural, and not to be conceived a miracle: though even the manner of its preservation might have made me own it as a wonderful event of God's kind providence.

It was about the latter end of June when the ears of this corn ripened, which I laid up very carefully together with 20 or 30 stalks of rice, expecting one day I should reap the fruit of my labour; yet four years were expired before I could allow myself to eat any barley bread, and much longer time before I had any rice. After this, with indefatigable pains and industry, for three or four months,

at last I finished my wall on the 14th of April, having no way to go into it, but by a ladder against the wall.

April 16. I finished my ladder, and ascended it; afterwards pulled it up, then let it down on the other side, and descended into my new habitation, where I had space enough, and so fortisied, that nothing could attack me,

without scaling the walls.

gin

and,

for

nit,

ock,

rain

onth

ook

Wit

OF

me

this

life

and

fh-

OW

2018

nt-

te-

eed

me

es;

er-

lo

be

nt

to

en

nc

ng

::

re

0-

is

h

P

d

h

3

But what does all human pains and industry avail, if the bleffing of God does not crown our labours? Or who can stand before the Almighty, when he stretcheth forth his arm? For one time as I was at the entrance of my cave, there happened fuch a dreadful earthquake, that not only the roof of the cave came rumbling about my ears, but the posts seemed to crack terribly at the same time. put me in great amazement; and running to the ladder, and getting over the wall, I then plainly knew it was an earthquake, the place I stood on sustaining three terrible shocks in less than three minutes. But judge of my terror when I saw the top of a great rock roll into the sea; I then expected the island would be swallowed up every moment: And what made the scene still more dreadful, was to fee the fea thrown into the most violent agitations and disorders by this tremendous accident.

For my part I stood like a criminal at the place of execution ready to expire. At the moving of the earth, I was, as it were, sea-sick; and very much asraid lest the rock, under which was my fence and habitation, should

overwhelm me and it in a lasting tomb.

When the third dreadful shock had spent itself, my spirits began to revive; yet still I would not venture to ascend the ladder, but continued sitting, not knowing what I should do. So little grace had I then, as only to say, Lord have mercy upon me! and no sooner was the earthquake over, but

that pathetic prayer left me.

It was not long after, when a horrible tempest arose, at the same time attended with a hurricane of wind. The sea seemed mountains high, and the waves rolled so impetuously, that nothing could be perceived but froth and soam. Three hours did this storm continue, and in so violent a manner, as to tear the very trees up by the roots, which was succeeded by abundance of rain. When the tempest was over I went to my tent: but the rain coming on in a surious manner, I was obliged to take shelter in the cave, where I was forced to cut a channel through my for-

ing

m

B

er

fc

0

H

tl

tification to let the water out. It continued raining all that night, and some time the next day. These accidents made me resolve, as soon as the weather cleared up, to build me a little hut in some open place, walled round to defend me from wild creatures and savages; not doubting but, at the next earthquake, the mountain would fall upon my habitation and me, and swallow up all in its bowels.

April 16—20. These days I spent in contriving how and in what manner I should fix my place of abode. All this while I was under the most dreadful apprehensions. When I looked round my habitation, every thing I sound in its proper place. I had several resolutions whether I should move or not; but at length resolved to stay where I was, till I sound out a convenient place where I might pitch my tent.

April 22. When I began to put my resolutions in practice, I was stopt for want of tools and instruments to work with. Most of my axes and hatchets were useless, occasioned by cutting the hard timber that grew on the island. It took me up a full week to make my grindstone of use to me; and at last I found out a way to turn it about with my foot, by help of a wheel and a string.

April 28, 29. These days were spent in grinding my tools.

April 30. My bread falling short, I allowed myself but

one biscuit a day.

May 1. As I walked along the sea shore, I found a barrel of gunpowder, and several pieces of the wreck, the sea had slung up. Having secured those, I made to the ship, whose stern was torn off, and wained a great distance ashore; but the rest lay in the sands. This I suppose was occasioned by the earthquake. I now resolved to keep my old place of abode; and also to go to the ship that day, but then sound it impossible.

May 3. This day I went on board, and with my faw fawed off one of the beams, which kept her quarter-deck.

I then cleared the fand till flood.

May 4. I caught some fish, but they were not wholesome. The same day I also catched a young dolphin.

May 5. This day I also repaired to the wreck, and fawed another piece of timber; and when the flood came, I made a float of three great planks, which were driven ashore by the tide.

May 6, 7, 8, 9. These days I brought off the iron bolts, opened the deck with the iron crow, and carried two planks to land, having made a way into the very middle of the

wreck.

May 10, 11, 12. 13, 14. All this time I spent in bringing off great quantities of iron and timber.

May 15. Took with me two hatchets on purpose to cut off some lead from the roll, but all in vain, for it lay too low under water.

May 16. I omitted going to the wreck this day; for employing myself in looking for pigeons, I outstaid my time.

May 17. I perceived several pieces of the wreck driven ashore, which I found belonged to the head of the ship.

May 24. To this day I worked on the wreck, and with great difficulty loosened some things so much with the crow, that at the first slowing tide several casks floated out, and many of the seamens' chests; yet that day nothing came to land but pieces of timber, and a hogshead which had some Brazil pork in it. I continued working to the 15th of June; (except necessary times for food and rest) and had I known how to have built a boat, I had timber and planks enough: I had also near 100 weight of sheet lead.

June 16. As I was wandering towards the sea side, I found a large tortoise or turtle, being the first I had seen on the island, though, as I afterwards found, there were many on the other side of it.

many on the other fide of it.

Il that

made

ld me

id me

at the

habi-

how

All

ions.

nd in

ould

, till

tent.

rac-

vork

cca-

and.

ule

with

ols.

but

ar-

fea.

ip,

nce.

vas

eep.

hat

aw

k.

le-

nd

e,

en

5.

KS

10

June 17. This day I spent in cooking it, found in her threescore eggs, and her slesh the most savoury and pleasant I ever tasted in my life.

June 18. I staid within this day, there being a continual rain: and it was somewhat more chilly and cold than usual.

June 19. Exceedingly bad, being taken with a trembling and shivering,

June 20. Awake all night, my head racked with pain and feverish.

June 21. Sick unto death, and terrified with the difmal apprehensions of my condition. Prayed to God more frequently, but very confusedly.

June 22. Something better, but still uneasy in my mind.

June 23. Again relapsed much as before. June 24. Mended a second time.

June 25. A violent ague for seven hours, cold and hot fits succeeded with faint sweats.

June 26. Better, but very weak; yet I fcrambled out, shot a she-goat, brought it home, and broiled some of it: I would willingly have stewed it, and made some broth, but had no pot.

B 6

June 27. All this day I was afflicted with an ague; thirsty, yet could not help myself to water: Prayed to God in these words: "Lord, in pity, look upon me: Lord have mercy upon me: have mercy upon me!". After this I fell asleep, which I found had much refreshed me when I awaked. I fell asleep a second time, and fell into

tha

ed,

mo

efo

nie

kn

CO

no

ga

fe!

W

ve

P

..

h

n

11

t

I

this strange and terrible fort of dream.

Methought I was fitting on the same spot of ground at the outfide of the wall where I fat when the storm blew after the earthquake; and that I faw a man descending from a great black cloud, and light upon the ground. He was all over as bright as a flash of fire that a little before furrounded him; his countenance inconceivably terrible; the earth as it were trembled when he stept upon the ground, and flashes of fire seemed to fill all the air. fooner I thought him landed upon the earth, but with a long spear, or other weapon, he made towards me; but first ascending a rising ground, his voice added to my amazement, when I thought I heard him pronounce these dreadful words, " Unhappy wretch! feeing all these things " have not brought thee to repentance, thou shalt imme-"diately die." In pronouncing this dreadful sentence, I thought he went to kill me with the spear that was in his hand.

Any body may think it impossible for me to express the horrors of my mind at this vision: and even when I awaked, this very dream made a deep impression upon my The little divine knowledge I had, I received mind. from my father's instructions, and that was worn out by an uninterrupted feries of fea faring impiety for eight years space. Except what sickness forced from me, I do not remember I had one thought of lifting up my heart towards God; but rather had a certain stupidity of soul, not having the least sense or fear of the Omnipotent Being when in distress, nor of gratitude to him for his deliverances. Nay, when I was on the desperate expedition on the defert African shore, I cannot remember I had one thought of what would become of me, or to beg his confolation and affiftance in my fufferings and diffress. When the Portugal captain took me up, and honourably used me; nay, farther, when I was even delivered from drowning by escaping to this island, I never looked upon it as a judgement, but only faid I was an unfortunate dog, and that's all. Indeed, some secret transports of soul I had, which was not through grace, but only a common flight of joy, that I was yet alive, when my companions were all drowned, and no other joy could I conceive but what is common with the failors over a bowl of punch, after they have

esoaped the greatest dangers.

od

ord

ter

me

ito

at

ew

ng

le

re;

he

Vo

a

ut

ſe

35

-

I

13

e

y

n

t

t

The likelihood of wanting for neither food nor conveniences, might have called upon me for a thankful acknowledgment to Providence. Indeed, the growth of my corn touched me with some sense; but that soon were off again. The terrible earthquake pointed to me, as it were, the singer of God, but my dreadful amazement continued no longer than its duration. But now, when my spirits began to sink under the burthen of a strong distemper, and I could leisurely view the miseries of death present themselves before my eyes, then my awakened conscience began to reproach me with my past life, in which I had so wickedly provoked the justice of God to pour down his vengeance upon me.

Such reflections as these oppressed me even in the violence of distemper. Some prayers I uttered, which only proceeded from the sear of death. But when I considered my father's advice and prophecy, I could not forbear weeping; for, he told me, "That if I did persist in my "folly, I should not only be deprived of God's blessing, but have time enough to reflect upon my despising his "instructions, and this, in a wretched time, when none could help me." And now, concluding it to be sulfilled, having no soul in the island to administer any comfort to me, I prayed earnessly to the Lord, that he would help me in this my great calamity. And this, I think, was the first time I prayed in sincerity for many years. But now I

must return to my journal.

June 28. Something refreshed with sleep, and the sit quite off, I got up. My dream still occasioned in me a great consternation; and, searing that the ague might return the succeeding day, I concluded it time to get something to comfort me. I silled a case bottle with water, and set it within reach of my bed; and, to make it more nourishing and less chilly, I put some rum in it. The next thing I did was to broil me a piece of goat's sless, of which I ate but little. I was very weak; however, walked about, dreading the return of my distemper; and at night I supped on three of the turtle's eggs, which I roasted and ate, begging God's blessing therewith.

After I had eaten, I attempted to walk again out of doors with my gun; but was so weak, that I sat down, and looked at the sea, which was smooth and calm. While I continued here these thoughts came into my mind.

In what manner is the production of the earth and fea of which I have feen so much? From whence came myself, and all other creatures living, and of what are they made?

Our beings were assuredly created by some almighty invisible Power, who framed the earth, the sea, and air,

and all-therein. But what is that power?

Certainly it must follow, that God has created it all. Yet, said I, if God has made all this, he must be the ruler of them all, and what is relating thereto; for certainly the power that makes, must indisputably have a power to guide and direct them. And if this be so, (as certainly it must) nothing can happen without his knowledge and appointment. Then, surely, if nothing happens without God's appointment, certainly God has appointed these my sufferings to be sal me. And here I fixed my firm belief, that it was his will that it should be so; and then proceeded to inquire, why should God deal with me in this manner? Or what have I done thus to deserve his indignation?

Here conscience slew in my face, reprehending me as a blasphemer; crying with a loud and piercing voice, "Unworthy wretch! how dare you ask what you have done?
Look on your past life, and see what you have left undone?
Ask thyself, why thou wert not long ago in the merciless hands of death? Why not drowned in Yarmouth roads,
or killed in the sight, when the ship was taken by the
Sallee man of war? Why not entombed in the bowels of

wild beafts on the African coast, or drowned here when all thy companions suffered shipwreck in the ocean?"

Struck dumb with these restections, I rose up in a penfive manner, being so thoughtful that I could not go to
sleep; and searing the dreadful return of my distemper, it
caused me to remember, that the Brazilians use tobacco
for almost all diseases. I then went to my chest in order
to find some, where Heaven, no doubt, directed me to find
a cure for both soul and body; for there I sound one of
the bibles, which, till this time, I had neither leisure nor
inclination to look into. I took both the tobacco and that
out of the chest, and laid them on the table. Several experiments did I try with the tobacco: First, I took a piece
of leaf, and chewed it; but it being very green and strong,

almost stupisted me. Next I steeped it in some rum an hour or two, resolving when I went to bed to take a dose of it: and, in the third place, I burnt some over a pan of fire, holding my nose over it so long as I could endure it without suffocation.

In the intervals of this operation, though my head was giddy and disturbed by the tobacco, I took up the Bible to read. No sooner did I open it, but there appeared to me these words, " Call on me in the day of trouble, and

" I will deliver thee, and thou shalt glorify me."

of

nd

: I

of

lf,

e ?

ty

11,

11.

er

ne

le

t)

t-

's

f-

at

0

7 1

2.

3

3

e

f

t

)

At first this sentence made a very deep impression on my heart; but it foon wore off again, when I confidered the word deliver was foreign to me. And as the children of Israel said, when they were promised flesh to eat, " Can God spread a table in the Wilderness ?" in like manner I began to fay, " Can God himself deliver me from this desolate island?" However, the words would still return to my mind, and afterwards made a greater impression upon me. As it now was very late, and the tobacco had dozed my head, I was inclined to fleep; but before I would lie down, I fell on my knees, and implored the promise that God had made to me in the Holy Scriptures, that "if I called upon "him in the day of trouble, he would deliver me." With much difficulty I afterwards drank the rum wherein I had steeped the tobacco, which flying into my head, threw me into fuch a profound fleep, that it was three o'clock the next day before I awaked; or, rather I believe, I slept two days, having certainly loft a day in my account, and I could never tell any other way. When I got up, my fpirits were lively and cheerful; my stomach much better, being very hungry; and, in short no fit returned the next day, which was the 29th, but I found myself much altered for the better.

The 30th, I went abroad with my gun, but not far, and killed a fea-fowl or two, refembling a brand goofe, which, however, I cared not to eat when I brought them home, but dined on two more of the turtle's eggs. In the evening I renewed my medicine, excepting that I did not take fo large a quantity, neither did I chew the leaf, or hold my head over the smoke: but the next day, which was the 1st of July, having a little return of the cold fit, I again took my medicine as I-did, the first time.

July 3. The fit quite left me, but very weak. In this condition, I often thought of these words, "I will deliver thee;" and while at some times I would think of the

tin

we

hu

no

ha

m

cu

to

th

tra

m

or

th

ft

ti

tl

W

n

b

impossibility of it, other thoughts would reprehend me, for disregarding the deliverances I had received, even from the most forlorn and distressed condition. I asked myself, what regard have I had to God for his abundant mercies? Have I done my part? "He has delivered me, but I have "not glorisied him:"—as if I had said, I had not owned and been thankful for these as deliverances, and how could I expect greater? So much did this sensibly touch my heart, that I gave God thanks for my recovery from sick-

ness in the most humble prostration.

July 4. This morning I began seriously to ponder on what is written in the New Testament, resolving to read a chapter every morning and night as long as my thoughts would engage me. As foon as I fet about this work feriously, I found my heart deeply affected with the impiety of my past life; these words that I thought were spoken to me in my dream revived, " All these things have not "brought thee to repentance." After this, I begged of God to affift me with his Holy Spirit in returning to my duty. One day, in perusing the Scriptures, I came to these words, " He is exalted a Prince and a Saviour, to give " repentance, and to give remission:" Immediately I laid down the book, and, with uplifted hands to Heaven, loudly cried, "O bleffed Jesus, thou son of David, Jesus, thou " exalted Prince and Saviour, give me repentance!" And now indeed I prayed with a true sense of my condition, and a more certain hope, founded on the word of God. Now I had a different sense of these words, " Call on me "and I will deliver thee," that is, from the dreadful load of guilt which oppressed my sinful soul, and not from a folitary life, which might rather be called a bleffing, feeing I wanted neither food nor raiment, when compared with living among the human race, furrounded with fo much oppression, misery, and affliction: In a word, I came to this conclusion, that a deliverance from fin was a much greater bleffing than a deliverance from affliction. But again I proceed to my journal.

To the 14th of July, I walked about with my gun, little and a little at a time, having been reduced to the greatest extremity of weakness. The applications and experiments I used were perfectly new: neither could I recommend them to any one's practice. For though it carried off the sit, it very much weakened me; and I had frequently convulsions in my nerves and limbs for some

time. From this I learned, that going abroad in rainy weather, especially when it was attended with storms and hurricanes of wind, was most pernicious to health. I had now been about ten months in the island; and as I never had seen any of the human kind, I therefore accounted myself as sole monarch; and as I grew better, having secured my habitation to my mind, I resolved to make a tour round my kingdom, in order to make new discoveries.

The 15th of July I began my journey; I first went to the creek, where I had brought my rafts on shore; and travelling farther, found the tide went no higher than two miles up, where there was a little brook of running water, on the bank of which were many pleasant savannahs or meadows, plain, smooth, and covered with grass. the rifing parts, where I supposed the water did not reach, I perceived a great deal of tobacco growing to a very strong stalk. Several other plants I likewise found, the virtues of which I did not understand. I searched a long time for the Cassava root, which I knew the Indians in that climate made their bread of; but all in vain. There were several plants of aloes, though at that time I knew not what they were; likewife I faw feveral fugar canes, but imperfect for want of cultivation. With these few discoveries I came back that night, and flept contentedly in my little castle.

The next day, being the 16th, going the same way, but farther than the day before, I found the country more adorned with woods and trees. Here I perceived different fruits in great abundance. Melons in plenty lay on the ground, and clusters of grapes, ripe and very rich, spread over the trees. You may imagine I was glad of this discovery, yet ate very sparingly, lest I should throw myself into a flux or fever. The grapes I found of excellent use; for when I had dried them in the sun, which preserved them as dried raisins are kept, they proved very wholesome and nourishing, and served me in those seasons when no

grapes were to be had.

for

om

elf,

28 ?

ve

ed

ıld

ny

k-

nc

a

ts

1-

y

n

ot

f

y

e

e

1

1

The night drawing on apace, I ascended up a tree, and slept very comfortably, though it was the first time I had lain out of my habitation. And when the morning came, I proceeded with great pleasure on my way, travelling about four miles, as I imagined, by the length of the valley, directing my course northward, their being a ridge of hills on the south and north side of me. At the end of this

valley I came to an opening, where the country feemed to descend to the west; there I found a little spring of fresh water, proceeding out of the fide of the hill, with its crystal streams running directly east. And indeed here my fenses were charmed with the most beautiful landscape nature could afford; for the country appeared so flourishing, green, and delightful, that to me it seemed like a planted garden. I then descended on the side of that delicious vale, when I found abundance of cocoa, orange, lemon, and citron trees, but very wild and barren at that time. As for the limes, they were delightful and wholesome, the juice of which I after used to mix in water, which made it very cooling and refreshing. And now I was resolved to carry home and lay up a store of grapes, limes, and lemons, against the approaching wet season. So laying them up in separate parcels, and then taking a few of each with me, I returned to my little castle, after having spent three days in this journey. Before I got home, the grapes were so bruised that they were utterly spoiled: the limes indeed were good, but of those I could bring only a few.

July 19. Having prepared two bags, I returned thither again, but to my great surprise, sound all the grapes spread about, trod to pieces, and abundance eaten, which made me conclude there were wild beasts thereabouts. To prevent this happening again, I gathered a large quantity of the grapes, and hung them upon the out branches of the tree, both to keep them unhurt, and that they might cure and dry in the sun: and having well loaded myself with limes and lemons, I returned once more to my old place of residence.

And now contemplating on the fruitfulness of this valley, and pleasantness of its situation, its security from storms, and the delightfulness of the adjacent woods, I concluded I was settled in the worst part of the country, and therefore was thinking to remove my habitation.

But when I considered again, that though it was pleafant, it was off from the sea side, where there was a possibility, some time or other, a ship might either be driven or sail by; and that to inclose myself among hills and woods must certainly put an end to my hopes of deliverance; I resolved to let my castle remain where Providence had first assigned it. Yet so ravished was I with this place, that I made me a little kind of bower, surrounding it with a double hedge, as high as I could reach, well staked and filled with bullrushes: and having spent a great part of the month of July, I think it was the first of August before I began to enjoy my labour.

Aug. 3. Perceiving my grapes to be dry, I took them from the trees, and they proved excellent good raisins of the sun: the most of which I carried to my cave; and happy for me I did so, by which I saved the best part of

my winter food.

med to

f fresh

ts cry-

re my

pe na-

thing,

lanted

icious

mon,

time.

, the

de it

ed to

ons,

n up

with

hree.

vere

eed.

her

pes

ich.

To.

ity

of

ht

elf

ld -

7,

d

e

Aug. 14. This day it began to rain; and though I had made me a tent like the other, yet having no shelter of a hill to keep me from storms, nor a cave behind me to retreat to, I was obliged to return to my old castle. The rain continued more or less every day, till the middle of October; and sometimes so violently, that I could not stir out of my cave for several days. This season I sound my samily to increase; for one of my cats that ran away from me, and which I thought had been dead, returned about August, with three kittens at her heels, like herself; which I thought strange, because both my cats were semales and the wild cats of the island seemed to be of a different kind from our European cats; but from these cats proceeded such numbers, that I was forced to kill and destroy them as I would do wild beasts or vermin.

To the 26th of this month, I could not stir out, it raining incessantly; when beginning to want food, I was compelled to venture twice, the first of which I shot a goat, and afterwards found a very large tortoise. The manner of my regulating my food was thus: a bunch of raisins served me for my breakfast; a piece of goat's slesh or turtle boiled for my dinner, and two or three turtle's eggs for my supper. While the rain lasted, I daily worked two or three hours at enlarging my cave, and by degrees worked it on towards one side, till I came to the outside of the hill, and made a door or way out, which came beyond my sence or wall, and so I came in and out this way. But after I had done this, I was troubled to see myself thus exposed; though I could not perceive any thing to fear, a goat being the

biggest creature I had seen upon this island.

Sept. 30. Casting up my notches on my post, which amounted to 365, I concluded this to be the anniversary of my landing; and, therefore, humbly prostrating myself on the ground, confessing my sins, acknowledging God's righteous judgments upon me, and praying to Jesus Christ

gene

Hal

Ha

H

H

to have mercy upon me, I fasted for twelve hours till the going down of the fun; and then eating a biscuit and a bunch of grapes, laid me on the bed, and with great comfort took my night's repose. Till this time I never had distinguished the Sabbath day; but now I made a longer notch than ordinary for the days of rest, and divided the weeks as well as I could, though I found I had loft a day or two in my account. My ink failing foon after, I omitted in my daily memorandum things of an indifferent nature, and contented myfelf to write down only the most remarkable events of my life. The rainy and dry feafons appeared now regular to me, and experience taught me how to provide for them; yet, in one thing I am going to relate, my experience very much failed me. You may call to mind what I have mentioned of some barley and rice which I had faved; about thirty stalks of the former, and twenty of the latter; and, at that time, the fun being in its fouthern position, going from me, together with the rains, made me conclude it a very proper season to sow it-Accordingly I dug up a piece of ground, with my wooden spade, and dividing it in two parts, sowed about two thirds of my feed, preserving by me about a handful of each. And happy it was I did so; for no rains falling, it was choaked up, and never appeared above the earth till the wet season came again, and then part of it grew, as if it had been newly fown.

I was resolved still to make another trial; and seeking for a moister piece of ground near my bower, I there sowed the rest of my seed in February, a little before the vernal equinox; which having the rainy months of March and April to water it, yielded a noble crop, and sprang up very pleasantly. I had still saved part of the seed, not daring to venture all; and by the time I sound out the proper feasons to sow it in, and that I might expect every year two seed-times and two harvests, my stock amounted to

above half a peck of each fort of grain.

No fooner were the rains over, but the stakes which I had cut from the trees, shot out like willows the first year after lopping their heads. I was ignorant of the tree I cut them from; but they grew so regularly beautiful, that they made a most lively appearance, and so flourished in three years time, that I resolved to cut more of them; and these soon growing, made a glorious sence, as afterwards I shall observe.

And now I perceived that the seasons of the year might generally be divided, not into summer and winter, as in Europe, but into wet and dry seasons, as in this manner:

the da mnad ger the ay it-12-31c ns ne to 11 e d n e -1

Half -	February, March, April,	Rainy, fun coming near the Equinox.
Half	April, May, June,	Dry, sun getting North of the Line.
	July, August, August, September,	Wet, the fun being then come back.
1	October, October, November,	
	December, January, February,	Dry, sun running South of the Line.

The wet feafons would continue longer or shorter, as the winds happened to blow. But having found the ill confequences of being abroad in the rain, I took care beforehand to furnish myself with provisions : and, during the wet months, fat within doors as much as possible. At this time I contrived to make many things that I wanted, though it cost me much labour and pains, before I could accomplish The first I tried was to make a basket; but all the twigs I could get, proved so brittle, that I could not then perform it. It now proved of great advantage to me, that when a boy, I took a great delight in standing at a basketmaker's in the same town where my father lived, to view them at work; and, like other boys, curious to fee the manner of their working these things, and very officious to affift, I perfectly learned the method of it, and wanted no-And it coming into my mind, that thing but the tools. the twigs of that tree of which I made my stakes, might be as tough as a fallow willow, or offers, growing in England, I resolved to make an experiment, and went the next day to my country feat, and found some fit for my turn; and after cutting down a quantity with my hatchet, I dried them in my pale, and, when fit to work with, carried them to my cave, where I employed myself in making several forts

of balkets, infomuch that I could put in whatfoever I pleafed. It is true, they were not cleverly made, yet they ferved my

turn upon all occasions.

But still I wanted two necessary things. I had no cask to hold my liquor, except two rundlets almost full of rum, a few bottles of an ordinary fize, and some square case bottles; neither had I a pot to boil any thing in, only a large kettle, unfit to make broth, or flew a bit of meat: I wanted likewise at the beginning of this dry season a tobacco pipe; but for this I afterwards found an expedient.

I kept myself employed in planting my fecond row of stakes. But remembering that when I travelled up to the brook, I had a mind to see the whole island, I now resumed my intention, and taking my dog, gun, hatchet, two bifcuit cakes, a great bunch of raisins, with a larger quantity of powder and shot than usual, I began my journey. Having passed the vale where my bower stood, I came within view of the fea lying to the west; when, it being a clear day, I fairly descried land, extending from the W. to the S. W. about ten or fifteen leagues, as I concluded; but could not fay whether it was an island or a continent. Neither could I tell what this place might be; only thought it was part of America, and where I might have been in a miserable condition, had I landed. Again I considered that if this was the Spanish coast, certainly, one time or other, I should see some ship pass by; and if it was not, then it must be the savage coast, between the Spanish country and Brazil, which abounds with cannibals or man-

As I proceeded forward, I found this fide of the illand much more pleasant than mine; the fields fragrant, adorned with sweet flowers and verdant grass, together with several very fine woods. There were parrots in plenty, which made me long for one to be my companion; but it was with great difficulty I could knock one down with my flick; and I kept him at home some years, before I could

get him to call me by my name.

In the low grounds I found various forts of hares and foxes, as I took them to be, but much different from those in England. Several of these I killed, but never ate them; neither indeed had I any occasion; for abounding with goats, pigeons, turtle, and grapes, I could defy Leadenhall market to furnish me a better table. In this journey I did not travel above two miles a day, because I

took could defig a pla tore fhore : was ftant man peng was Thethe

> fatis that of t twe pile jour froi As cou mil rou gui fiti my ge the al As fo mı an

> > to A er

ftr

th

th

could make, returning weary enough to the place where I defigned to rest all night, which was either in a tree, or in a place which I surrounded with stakes, that no wild creatore might suddenly surprise me. When I came to the sea shore, I was amazed to see the splendor of it. Its strand was covered with shells of the most beautiful sish, and constantly abounding with innumerable turtles, and sowls of many kinds, which I was ignorant of, except those called penguins. I might have shot as many as I pleased, but was sparing of my ammunition, rather choosing to kill a she-goat, which I did with much difficulty, on account of

the flatness of the country.

d.

ly

sk

n,

a

I

-

f

1

Now, though this journey produced me the most pleasing fatisfaction, yet my habitation was fo much to my liking, that I did not repine at my being feated on the worst part of the island. I continued my journey, travelling about twelve miles further towards the east, where I set a great pile on the shore for a mark, concluding that my next journey should bring me to the other side of the island, east from my castle, and so round till I came to my post again. As I had a constant view of the country, I thought I could not miss my way; but scarce had I travelled three miles, when I descended into a very large valley, so surrounded with hills covered with wood, that I having no guide but the fun, nor even this, unless I knew well the pofition of the time at that time of the day; and to add to my misfortune, the weather proving very hazy, I was obliged to return to my post by the sea side, and so backwards the same way I came. In this journey my dog surprised a kid, and would have killed it, had I not prevented him. As I had often been thinking of getting a kid or two, and fo raising a breed of tame goats to supply me after my ammunition was spent, I took this opportunity of beginning: and, having made a collar for this little creature, with a string made of rope yarn, I brought it to my bower, and there inclosed and left him; and, having spent a month in this journey, at length I returned to my own habitation.

Nobody can doubt of my satisfaction, when I returned to my little castle, and reposed myself in my hammock. After my journey I rested myself a week, which time I employed in making a cage for my pretty Poll. I now began to consider of the poor kid I had left in the bower, and I immediately went to setch it home. When I came there

I found the young creature almost starved; I gave it some food, and tied it as before: but there was no occasion, for it followed me like a dog; and, as I constantly fed it, it became so loving, gentle, and fond, that it commenced one

of my domestics, and would never leave me.

The rainy season of the autumnal equinox being now come, I kept the 30th of September in the most solemn manner, as usual, it being the third year of my abode in the island. I spent the whole day in acknowledging God's mercies, in giving him thanks for making this solitary life as agreeable, and less sinful, than that of human society; and for the communications of his grace to my soul, in supporting, comforting, and encouraging me to depend upon his Providence, and hope for his eternal presence in the world to come.

Indeed, I often did confider how much more happy I was, in this state of life, than in that accursed manner of living I formerly used: and sometimes when hunting, or viewing the country, the anguish of my soul would break out upon me, and my very heart would sink within me, to think of the woods, the mountains, the deserts I was in; and how I was a prisoner locked up within the eternal bars and bolts of the ocean, in an uninhabited wilderness, without hopes, and without redemption. In this condition I would often wring my hands, and weep like a child: And even sometimes, in the middle of my work, this sit would take me; and then I would sit down and sigh, looking on the ground for an hour or two together, till such time as

my grief got vent in a flood of tears.

One morning, as I was fadly employed in this manner, I opened my Bible, when I immediately fixed my eyes upon these words, "I will never leave thee, nor forsake "thee!" Surely, thought I, these words are directed to me, or else why should they appear just at a moment when I am bemoaning my forlorn condition? and if God does not forsake, what matters it, since he can make me more happy in this state of life, than if I enjoyed the greatest splendor in the world? But while I was going to return God thanks for my present state, something seemed to shock my mind, as if it had thus said: Unworthy wretch; can you pretend to be thankful for a condition, from which you would pray to be delivered! Here I stopt;—and tho' I could not say, I thanked the Divine Majesty for being there, yet I gave God thanks for placing to my view my

ford of the I be in land occurrent

plo lig thr wh hou fer fup the fo for of to ma WI tre Wa tw .pi til fic tu th

> fa wi fta

> > g

th

bo

in an

a

me

for

it

ne

w nn

in

l's

fe in

nd

in

I

of

rk

0

;

rs

-

I

d

1

S

former course of life, and granting me a true knowledge of repentance. And whenever I opened or shut the Bible, I blessed kind Providence, that directed my good friend in England to send it among my goods without any order, and for assisting me to save it from the power of the raging ocean.

And now beginning my third year, my feveral daily employments were these: First, My duty to Heaven, and diligently reading the Holy Scriptures, which I did twice or thrice every day: Secondly, Seeking provision with my gun, which commonly took me up, when it did not rain, three hours every morning: Thirdly, The ordering, curing, preferving, and cooking what I killed, or catched for my supply, which took me up a great part of the day: for, in the middle of the day, the sun being in its height, it was fo hot, that I could not flir out; fo that I had only but four hours in the evening to work in: and then the want of tools, of affiftance, and skill, wasted a great deal of time to little purpose. I was no less than two and forty days making a board fit for a long shelf, which two sawyers, with their tools and faw-pit, would have cut off the fame It was of a large tree, as my board tree in half a day. was to be broad. I was three days in cutting it down, and two more in lopping off the boughs, and reducing it to a This I hacked and hewed off each fide, piece of timber. till it became light to move; then I turned it, made one fide of it smooth and flat as a board from end to end, then turned it downward, cutting the other fide, till I brought the plank to be about three inches thick, and fmooth on Any body may judge my great labour and both fides. tatigue in such a piece of work; but this I went through with patience, as also many other things that my circumstances made necessary for me to do.

The harvest months, November and December, were now at hand, in which I had the pleasing prospect of a very good crop. But here I met with a new missortune; for the goats and hares, having tasted of the sweetness of the blade, kept it so short that it had not strength to shoot up into a stalk. To prevent this, I inclosed it with a hedge, and by day shot some of its devourers; and my dog which I had tied to the field-gate, keeping barking all night, so frightened those creatures, that I got entirely rid of them.

But, no sooner did I get rid of these, than other enemies appeared, to wit, whole slocks of several forts of birds,

who only waited till my back was turned, to ruin me. So much did this provoke me, that I let fly, and killed three of the malefactors; and afterwards ferved them as they do notorious thieves in England, hung them up in chains as a terror to others. And, indeed, fo good an effect had this, that they not only forlook the corn, but all that part of the

island, so long as these criminals hung there.

My corn having ripened apace, the latter end of December, which was my second harvest, I reaped it with a scythe, made of one of my broad swords. I had no fatigue in cutting down my first crop, it was so slender. The ears I carried home in a basket, rubbing it out with my hands, instead of threshing it: and when the harvest was over, found my half peck of seed produced near two bushels of rice, and two bushels and an half of barley. And now I plainly foresaw, that, by God's goodness, I should be furnished with bread; but yet I was concerned, because I knew not how to grind or make meal of my corn, nor bread, neither knew how to bake it. I would not, however, taste any of the crop, but resolved to preserve it against next season, and, in the mean while, use my best endeavours to provide myself with other food.

But where were my labours to end? The want of a plough to turn up the earth, or shovel to dig it, I conquered by making me a wooden spade. The want of a harrow I supplied myself, with dragging over the corn a great bough of a tree. When it was growing, I was forced to fence it; when ripe to mow it, carry it home, thrash it, part it from the chast, and save it. And, after all, I wanted a mill to grind it, sieve to dress it, yest and salt to make it into bread, and an oven to bake it. This set my brains to work to find some expedient for every one of these

necessaries against the next harvest.

And now having more feed, my first care was to prepare me more land. I pitched upon two large slat pieces
of ground near my castle, for that purpose in which I
sowed my seed, and fenced it with a good hedge. This
took me up three months: by which time the wet season
coming on, and the rain keeping me within doors, I found
several occasions to employ myself; and, while at work,
used to divert myself in talking to my parrot, learning
him to know and speak his own name Poll, the first welcome word I ever heard spoke in the island. I had been a
long time contriving how to make earthen vessels, which I

Se

ree

do

13 2

his,

the

e-

n a

fa-

'he

my

vas

els

WO

be

e I

101

W-

it

elt

r-

W

at

to

it,

I

to

ny

fe

e-

es

I

113

on

d

k,

wanted extremely: and when I considered the heat of the climate, I did not doubt but if I could find any such clay, I might botch up a pot, strong enough, when dried in the sun, to bear handling, and to hold any thing that was dry, as corn, meal, and other things.

To be short, the clay I found; but it would occasion the most serious person to smile, to see what awkward ways I took, and what ugly mishapen things I made; how many either sell out on cracked by the violent heat of the sun, and sell in pieces when they were removed; so that I think it was two months time before I could perfect any thing: and even then but two clumsy things, in imitation of earthen jars. These, however, I very gently placed in wicker baskets, made on purpose for them, and between the pot and the baskets, stuffed it sull of rice and barley straw; and these, I presumed would hold my dried corn, and perhaps the meal, when the corn was bruised. As for the smaller things, I made them with better success; such as little round pots, stat dishes, pitchers, and pipkins, the sun baking them very hard.

Yet still I wanted one thing absolutely necessary, and that was an earthen pot, not only to hold my liquid, but also to bear the fire, which none of these could do. It once happened, that as I was putting out my fire, I found therein a broken piece of one of my vessels burnt hard as a rock. and red as a tile. This made me think of burning some pots; and having no notion of a kiln, or of glazing them with lead, I fixed three large pipkins, and two or three pots in a pile one upon another. The fire I piled round the outfide, and dry wood on the top, till I saw the pots in the infide red hot, and found that they did not crack at all: and when I perceived them perfectly red, I let one of them fland in the fire about five or fix hours, till the clay melted by the extremity of the heat, and would have run to glass, had I suffered it; upon which I slacked my fire by degrees. till the redness abated; and watching them till the morning, I found I had three very good pipkins, and two earthen pots, as well burnt and fit for my turn as I could defire.

No joy could be greater than mine at this discovery. For after this, I may say, I wanted for no fort of earthen ware. I filled one of my pipkins with water to boil me some meat, which it did admirably well, and with a piece of kid I made me some good broth, as well as my circumstances would afford me at that time.

it f

ref

me

fro

me

of

Fo

za

an

ro

fta

the

WI

th

Si

ed

1

ro

th

th

V

ar

th

W

to

0

t

u

The next concern I had was to get me a stone-mortar to beat some corn in, instead of a mill to grind it. Here indeed I was at a great loss, as not being sit for a stone-cutter; and many days I spent to find out a great stone big enough to cut hollow and make sit for a mortar, and strong enough to bear the weight of a pestil, that would break the corn without silling it with sand. But all the stones of the island being of a mouldering nature, rendered my search fruitles; and then I resolved to look out for a great block of hard wood; which having sound, I sormed it with my ax and hammer, and then with infinite labour made a hollow in it, just as the Indians of Brazil make their canoes. When I had sinished this, I made a great pestil of iron wood, and then laid them up against my succeeding harvest.

My next business was to make me a sieve, to sift my meal, and part it from the bran and husk. Having no fine thin canvas to search the meal through, I could not tell what to do. What linen I had was reduced to rags: I had goats hair enough, but neither tools to work it, nor did I know how to spin it: At length I remembered I had some neckcloths of calico or muslin of the sailors, which I had brought out of the ship, and with these I made three small sieves proper enough for the work.

I come now to consider the baking part. The want of an oven I supplied by making some earthen pans very broad, but not deep. When I had a mind to bake, I made a great fire upon my hearth, the tiles of which I had made myself; and when the wood was burnt into live coals, I spread them over it, till it became very hot; then sweeping them away, I set down my loaves, and whelming down the earthen pots upon them, drew the ashes and coals all around the outsides of the pots to continue the heat; and in this manner I baked my barley loaves, as well as if I had been a complete pastry-cook, and also made of the rice several cakes and puddings.

It is no wonder that all these things took me up the best part of a year, since what intermediate time I had was bestowed in managing my new harvest and husbandry; for in the proper season I reaped my corn, carried it home, and laid it up in the ear in my large baskets, till I had time to rub, instead of thrashing it. And now indeed my corn increased so much, that it produced me twenty bushels of barley, and as much of sice, that I not only began to use

it freely, but was thinking how to enlarge my barns, and resolved to sow as much at a time as would be sufficient for

me for a whole year.

to

t-

ig

of

y

t

t

All this while, the prospect of land, which I had seen from the other fide of the island, ran in my mind. meditated a deliverance from this place, though the fear of greater misfortunes might have deterred me from it. For, allowing that I had attained that place, I run the hazard of being killed and eaten by the devouring cannibals; and if they were not so, yet I might be flain, as other Europeans had been, who fell into their hands. Notwithstanding all this, my thoughts ran continually upon that shore. I now wished for my boy Xury, and the long boat, with the shoulder of mutton sail: I went to the ship's boat that had been cast a great way on the shore in the late storm. She was removed but a little; but her bottom being turned up by the impetuofity and fury of the waves and wind, I fell to work with all the strength I had, with levers and rollers I had cut from the wood, to turn her, and repair the damages she had sustained. This work took me up three or four weeks, when finding my little strength all in vain, I fell to undermining it by digging away the fand, and so to make it fall down, setting pieces of wood to thrust and guide it in the fall. But after this was done, I was still unable to stir it up, or to get under it, much less to move it forwards towards the water, and so I was forced to give it over.

This disappointment, however, did not frighten me. Ibegan to think, whether it was not possible for me to make a canoe or perigua, such as the Indians make of the trunk of a tree. But here I lay under particular inconveniences; want of tools to make it, and want of hands to move it in the water when it was made. However, to work I went upon it, stopping all the inquiries I could make, with this very simple answer I made to myself, let's first make it, I'll warrant I'll find some way or other to get it along

when it is done.

I first cut down a cedar tree, which was five feet ten inches diameter at the lower part next the stump, and four feet eleven inches diameter at the end of twenty-two feet, after which it lessened for a space, and then parted into branches. Twenty days was I a hacking and hewing this tree at the bottom, sourteen more in cutting off the branches and limbs, and a whole month in shaping it like

to g

and

Eve

adn

der

wha

pre

how

fhi

tur

by

cla

wh

ho

th

m

by

ve

CT

te

th

the bottom of a boat. As for the infide, I was three weeks with a mallet and chiffel, clearing it in such a manner, as that it was big enough to carry twenty-fix men, much bigger than any canoe I ever saw in my life, and consequently sufficient to transport me and all my effects to that

wished-for shore I so ardently defired.

Nothing remained now, but, indeed, the greatest difficulty to get it into the water, it lying about one hundred yards from it. To remedy the first inconvenience, which was a rifing hill between this boat and the creek, with wonderful pains and labour I dug into the furface of the earth, and made a declivity. But when this was done, all the frength I had was as infufficient to remove it, as it was when I attempted to remove the boat. I then proceeded to meafure the distance of ground, resolving to make a canal, in order to bring the water to the canoe, fince I could not bring the canoe to the water. But as this feemed to be impracticable to myfelf alone, under the space of eleven or twelve years, it brought me into some fort of consideration: fo that I concluded this also to be impossible, and the attempt altogether vain. I now faw, and not before, what stupidity it is to begin work before we reckon its costs, or judge rightly our own abilities to go through with its per-

In the height of this work my fourth year expired, from the time I was cast on this island. At this time I did not forget my anniversary; but kept it with rather greater devotion than before. For now my hopes being frustrated, I looked upon this world as a thing I had nothing to do with; and very well might I fay, as father Abraham faid unto Dives, "Between thee and me there is a gulph fixed." And indeed I was separated from its wickedness too, having neither the luft of the flesh, the luft of the eye, nor the pride of life; I had nothing to covet, being lord, king, and emperor over the whole country I had in possession, without dispute, and without controul: I had loadings of corn, plenty of turtles, timber in abundance, and grapes above measure. What was all the rest to me? the money I had lay by me as despicable dross, which I would freely have given for a gross of tobacco pipes, or a hand mill to grind my corn: in a word, the nature and experience of these things dictated to me this just resection: That the good things of this world are no farther good to us, than they are for our use; and that whatever we may heap up

ta give to others, we can but enjoy as much as we use, and no more.

as

ch

e-

at

fi-

ed

h

1-

1,

le

n

:

n

t

e

These thoughts rendered my mind more easy than usual. Every time I fat down to meat, I did it with thankfulness, admiring the providential hand of God, who, in this wilderness had spread a table to me. And now I considered what I enjoyed, rather than what I wanted, compared my present condition with what I at first expected it should be; how I should have done, if I had got nothing out of the ship; that I must have perished before I had caught sish or turtles; or lived, had I found them, like a mere favage, by eating them raw, and pulling them in pieces with my claws, like a beaft. I next compared my station to that which I deserved: how undutiful I had been to my parents; how destitute of the fear of God; how void of every thing that was good; and how ungrateful for those abundant mercies I had received from Heaven, being fed, as it were, by a miracle, even as great as Elijah's being fed by ravens; and cast on a place where there is no venomous creatures to poison or devour me, in short, making God's tender mercies matter of great confolation, I relinquished all fadness, and gave way to contentment.

As long as my ink continued, which with water I made last as long as I could, I used to minute down the days of the month, on which any remarkable thing happened.—And,

First, I observed, that the same day I forsook my parents and friends, and ran away to Hull, in order to go to sea, the same day afterwards, in the next year, I was taken and made a slave by the Sallee rovers:

That the very day I escaped out of the wreck of the ship in Yarmouth roads, a year after, on the same day, I made my escape from Sallee in my patron's fishing-boat:

And, on the 30th of September, being the day of the year I was born on, on that day twenty-fix years after, was I miraculously faved, and cast ashore on this island.

The next thing that wasted after my ink, was the biscuit which I had brought out of the ship; and though I allowed myself but one cake a day, for above a twelvemonth, yet I was quite out of bread for near a year, before I got any corn of my own.

In the next place, my clothes began to decay, and my linen had been gone long before. However, I had preferved about three dozen of the failors chequered shirts

which proved a great refreshment to me, when the violent beams of the sun would not suffer me to bear any of the seamen's heavy watch-coats; which made me turn tailor, and, after a miserable botching manner, convert them to jackets. To preserve my head, I made me a cap of goatskins, with the hair outwards to keep out the rain; which indeed served me so well, that afterwards I made me a waistcoat and opened kneed breeches of the same: And then I contrived a fort of an umbrella, covering it with skins, which not only kept out the heat of the sun, but rain also. Thus being easy and settled in my mind, my chief happiness was to converse with God, in most heavenly and

comfortable ejaculations. For five years after this I cannot fay any extraordinary thing occurred to me. My chief employment was to cure my raisins, and plant my barley and rice, of both which I had a year's provision beforehand. But though I was difappointed in my first canoe, I made it at intermediate times, my bufiness to make a second, of much inferior fize; and it was two years before I had finished it. But as I perceived it would no wife answer my design of failing to the other shore, my thoughts were confined to take a tour round the island, to see what further discoveries I could make. To this intent, after having moved her to the water, and tried how she would fail, I sitted up a little mast to my boat, and made a fail of the ship's fail that lay by me. I then made lockers or boxes at the end of it, to put in necessaries, provision, and ammunition, which would preserve them dry, either from rain or the spray of the fea; and in the infide of the boat, I cut me a long hollow place to lay my gun in, and to keep it dry made a flag to hang over it. My umbrella I fixed in a step in the stern, like a mast, to keep the heat of the sun off me. And now resolving to see the circumference of my little kingdom, I victualled my ship for the voyage, putting in two dozen of my barley bread loaves, an earthen pot full of parched rice, a little bottle of rum, half a goat, powder and shot, and two watch coats. It was the 6th of November, in the 6th year of my reign, or captivity, that I fet out in this voyage; which was much longer than I expected, being obliged to put farther out, by reason of the rocks that lay a great way in the sea. And indeed so much did these rocks furprise me, that I was for putting back, fearing that if I ventured farther, it would be out of my power to reto w clim full

I

rent whi ous fea cer vat this per my cor the tra

le cu the be le

ab

m

to p

1

nt

he

r,

to.

t-

h

a

n

turn: In this uncertainty I came to an anchor just off shore, to which I waded with my gun on my shoulder, and then climbing up a hill, which overlooked that point, I saw the full extent of it, and so I resolved to run all hazards.

In this prospect from the hill, I perceived a violent current running to the east, coming very close to the point; which I the more carefully observed, thinking it dangerous, and that when I came to it, I might be drove into the fea by its force, and not able to return to the island: and certainly it must have been so, had I not made this observation; for on the other fide was the like current, with this difference, at it fet off at a greater distance; and I perceived there was a strong eddy under the land; so that my chief business was to work out of the first current, and conveniently get into the eddy. Two days I staid here, the wind blowing very briskly E. S. E. which being contrary to the current, leaves a great breach of the fea upon the point; fo it was neither fit for me to keep too near the shore, on account of the breach; nor stand at too great a distance, for fear of the streams. That night the wind abating, it grew fo calm, that I ventured out; and here I may be a monument to all rash and ignorant pilots: For I was no fooner come to the point, and not above the boat's * length from shore, but I was got into a deep water, with a current like a mill, which drove my boat along fo violently, that it was impossible for me to keep near the edge of it, but forced me more and more out from the eddy to the left of me; and all I could do with my padlers were useless, there being no wind to help me.

Now I began to look upon myself as quite lost, since, as the current ran on both sides of the island, I was very certain they must join again, and then I had no hopes but of perishing for want in the sea, after what provision I had was spent, or before, if a storm should happen to arise.

Who can conceive the present anguish of my mind at this calamity? with longing eyes did I look upon my little kingdom, and thought the island the pleasantest place in the universe. Happy, thrice happy desert," said I, shall I never see thee more? Wretched creature! whither am I going? Why did I murmur at my lonesome condition, when now I would give the whole world to be thither again? While I was thus complaining, I found myself to be driven about two leagues into the sea; however, I laboured till my strength was far spent, to keep my boat as far north

C 5

der

the

bro

as :

for

exc

the

do

in

tin

TO

dr

re

fri

fo

Po

W

I

th

m

"

lil

I

CC

th

W

tl

11

to

61

b

a

as possibly I could, to that side of the current where the eddy lay on. About noon I perceived a little breeze of wind fpring up from the S. S. E. which overjoyed my heart; and I was still more elated, when, in about half an hour, it blew a gentle fine gale. Had any thick weather fprung up, I had been lost another way: for having no compass on board, I should never have found the way to steer towards the island, if once it had disappeared; but it proving the contrary, I fet up my mast again, spread my fail, and flood away northward, as much as I could, to get rid of the current. And no sooner did the boat begin to stretch away, but I perceived, by the clearness of the water, a change of the current was near; for, where it was strong, the water was foul; and, where it was clear, the current abated. To the east, I soon saw, about half a mile, a breach of the fea upon some rocks, which caused it again to separate; and as the main force of it drove away more fouthwardly, leaving the rocks to the northeast, so the other came back by the repulse of the rocks, making a sharp eddy, which returned back again to the north-west with a very swift stream.

They who have experienced what it is to be reprieved upon the ladder, or to be faved from thieves, just going to take away their lives, or fuch as have been in the like calamities with my own, may guess my present excess of joy, how heartily I ran my boat into the stream of this eddy, and how joyfully I spread my fail to the refreshing wind, standing cheerfully before it, with a smart tide under foot. By the affistance of this eddy, I was carried above a league home again, when, being in the wake of the island, betwixt the two currents, I found the water to be in a fort of a stand. About four o'clock in the afternoon, I reached within a league of the island, and perceived the points of the rock, which caused this disaster, stretching out, as I observed before, to the southward, which throwing off the current more fouthwardly had occasioned another eddy to the north. But having a fair brisk gale, I stretched across this eddy, and in an hour came within a mile of the shore, where I foon landed to my unspeakable comfort; and after an humble prostration, thanking God for my deliverance, with a resolution to lay all thoughts of escaping aside, I brought my boat safe to a little cove, and laid me down to take a welcome repose. When I awoke, I was confidering how I might get my boat home; and coasting along the shore I came to a good bay, which ran up to a rivulet or brook, where, finding a safe harbour, I stowed her as safe as if she had been in a dry dock made on purpose for her.

I now perceived myself not far from the place where before I had travelled on foot; so taking nothing with me,
except my gun and umbrella, I began my journey, and in
the evening came to my bower, where I again laid me
down to rest. I had not slept long before I was awakened
in great surprise, by a strange voice that called me several
times, "Robin, Robin, Robinson Crusoe, poor Robin!
"Where are you, Robinson Crusoe? Where are you?

" Where have you been?"

e

of

y

n

er

0

0

t

So fast was I asleep at first, that I did not awake thoroughly; but half asleep and half awake, I thought I dreamed that somebody spoke to me. But, as the voice repeated Robinson Crusoe several times, being terribly affrighted, I started up in the utmost confusion; and, no fooner were my eyes fully open, but I beheld my pretty Poll fitting on the top of the hedge, and foon knew that it was he that called me; for just in such bewailing language I used to talk and teach him; which he so exactly learned, that he would fit upon my finger, and lay his bill close to my face, and cry, " Poor Robinson Crusoe, where are you? "where have you been? how came you here?" and fuch like prattle I had constantly taught him. But even though I knew it to be the parrot, it was a great while before I could adjust myself; being amazed how the creature got thither, and that he should fix about that place, and no where else. But now, being assured it could be no other than my honest Poll, my wonder ceased, and reaching out my hand, and calling familiarly Poll, the creature came to me, and perched upon my thumb, as he was wont, constantly prating to me with " Poor Robinson Crusoe, and "how did I come here, and where had I been?" as if the bird was overjoyed to see me; and so I took him home along with me.

I was now pretty well cured of my rambling to sea; yet I could wish my boat, which had cost me so much trouble and pains, on this side the island once more, but which indeed was impracticable. I therefore began to lead a very retired life, living near a twelvementh in a very contented manner, wanting for nothing except conversation. As to mechanic labours, which my necessities obliged me to, I

fino

to

to

ine

lar

be

mi

CO

pa

25

ya

11

t

n

0

fancied I could, upon occasion, make a tolerable carpenter were the poor tools I had to work withal but good. Bestides, as I improved in my earthen ware, I contrived to make them with a wheel, which I found much easier and better, making my work shapely, which before was rude and ugly. But, I think, I was never so elevated with my own performance, or project, than for being able to make a tobacco-pipe, which, though it proved an awkward clumfy thing, yet it was very sound, and carried the smoke perfectly well, to my great satisfaction.

I also improved my wicker ware, making me abundance of necessary baskets, which though not very handsome, were very handy and convenient to setch things home in, as also for holding my stores, barley, rice, and other provisions.

My powder beginning to fail, made me examine after what manner I should kill the goats or birds to live on after it was all gone. Upon which I contrived many ways to ensnare the goats, and see if I could catch them alive, particularly a she-goat with young. At last I had my desire; for, making pit-falls and traps baited with barley and rice, I found one morning, in one of them, an old he-goat, and in the other tree kids, one male the other two semales.

So boisterous was the old one, that I could not bring him away. But I forgot the old proverb, " That hunger " will tame a lion:" For, had I kept him three or four days without provisions, and then given him some water, with a little corn, he would have been as tame as a young kid. The other creatures I bound with strings together; but I had great difficulty before I could bring them to my habitation. It was some time before they would feed; but, throwing them sweet corn, it so much tempted them, that they began to be tamer. From hence I concluded, that if I defigned to furnish myself with goat's slesh, when my ammunition was spent, the tamely breeding them up, like a flock of sheep, about my settlement, was the only method I could take. I concluded also I must separate the wild from the tame, or elfe they would always run wild as they grew up; and the best way for this, was to have some inclosed piece of ground, well fenced, either with a hedge or pale, to keep them so effe tually, that those within might not break out, or those without break in. Such an undertaking was very great for one pair of hands; but as there was an absolute necessity for doing it, my first care was to

find a convenient piece of ground where there was likely to be herbage for them to eat, water to drink, and cover

to keep them from the fun.

ter

e=

ke

y.

r-

ofy

r-

ce

e,

1,

r

r

Here again I gave another instance of my ignorance and inexperience, pitching upon a piece of meadow land fo large, that had I inclosed it, the hedge or pale must have been at least two miles about. Indeed had it been ten miles, I had time enough to do it in; but then I did not consider that my goats would be as wild in so much compass, as if they had had the whole island, and consequently as difficult for me to catch them. This thought came into my head, after I had carried it on, I believe, about fifty yards: I therefore altered my scheme and resolved to inclose a piece of ground about one hundred and fifty yards in length, and one hundred in breadth, fufficient enough for as many as would maintain me, till fuch time as my flock increased, and then I could add more ground. I now vigoroufly profecuted my work, and it took me about three months in hedging the first piece; in which time I tethered the three kids in the best part of it, seeding them as near me as possible, to make them familiar: and indeed I very often would carry some ears of barley or a handful of rice, and feed them out of my hand; by which they grew fo tame, that when my inclosure was finished, and I had let them loofe, they would run after me for a handful of corn. This indeed answered my end; and in a year and a half's time I had a flock of about twelve goats, kids and all: and in two years after, they amounted to forty-three, befides what I had taken and killed for my fustenance. which I inclosed five several pieces of ground to feed them in, with pens to drive them into, that I might take them as I had occasion.

In this project I likewise sound additional blessings; for I not only had plenty of goat's sless, but milk too, which in my beginning, I did not so much as think of. And, indeed, though I had never milked a cow, much less a goat, or seen butter or cheese made, yet, after some essays and miscarriages, I made me both, and never afterwards wanted.

How mercifully can the omnipotent Power comfort his creatures, even in the midst of their greatest calamities? How can he sweeten the bitterest providences, and give us reason to magnify him in dungeons and prisons; what a

bounteous table was here spread in a wilderness for me, where I expected nothing at first but to perish for hunger.

thor

the

faw

fam

end

goa

cari

ove

whi

thir

fwa

fro

nin

gre

but

off

ho

for

ha

fe

pi

tr

bı

ne

W

0

Certainly a Stoic would have smiled to see me at dinner. There fat my royal majesty, and absolute prince and ruler of my kingdom, attended by my dutiful subjects, whom, if I pleased, I could either hang, draw, quarter, give them liberty, or take it away. When I dined, I feemed a king, eating alone, none daring to presume to do so till I had done. Poll, as if he had been my principal court favorite, was the only person permitted to talk with me. My old, but faithful dog, now grown exceeding crazy, and who had no species to multiply his kind upon, continually fat on my right hand; while my two cats fat on each fide of the table, expecting a bit from my hand, as a principal mark of my royal favour. These were not the cats I had brought from the ship; they had been dead long before, and interred near my habitation by mine own hand. But one of them, as I suppose, generating with a wild cat, a couple of their young I had made tame; the rest run wild into the woods, and in time grew fo impudent as to return and plunder me of my stores, till such time as I shot a great many, and the rest left me without troubling me any more. In this plentiful manner did I live, wanting for nothing but conversation. One thing indeed concerned me, the want of my boat; I knew not which way to get her round the island. One time I resolved to go along the shore by land to her; but had any one in England met fuch a figure, it would either have affrighted them, or made them burst into laughter; nay, I could not but smile myself at my habit, which I think in this place will be very proper to describe.

The cap I wore upon my head, was great, high, and shapeless, made of a goat's skin, with a slap or pent-house hanging down behind, not only to keep the sun from me, but to shoot the rain off from running into my neck, nothing being more pernicious than the rain falling upon the slesh in these climates. I had a short jacket of goat's skin, whose hair hung down such a length on each side, that it reached down to the calves of my legs. As for shoes and stockings, I had none, but made a resemblance of something, I know not what to call them; they were made like buskins, and laced on the sides like spatterdashes, barbarously shaped like the rest of my habit. I had a broad belt of goat's skin dried, girt round me with a couple of

thongs, inflead of buckles; on each of which, to fupply the deficiency of fword and dagger, hung my hatchet and faw. I had another belt, not so broad, yet fastened in the fame manner, which hung over my shoulder, and at the end of it, under my left arm, hung two pouches, made of goat's skin, to hold my powder and shot. My basket I carried on my back, and my gun on my shoulder; and over my head a great clumfy ugly goat's skin umbrella, which, however, next to my gun, was the most necessary thing about me. As for my face, the colour was not fo fwarthy as the Mulattoes, or as might have been expected from one who took so little care of it, in a climate within nine or ten degrees of the Equinox. At one time my beard grew so long that it hung down about a quarter of a yard; but as I had both razors and scissors in store, I cut it all off, and suffered none to grow, except a large pair of Mahometan whiskers, the like of which I had seen wore by fome Turks at Sallee, not long enough indeed to hang a hat upon, but of fuch a monstrous fize, as would have

amazed any in England to have feen.

e,

1.

r.

er

n,

m

d

)-

d

e

ł

But all this was of no confequence here, their being none to observe my behaviour or habit. And so, without fear and without controll, I proceeded on my journey, the profecution of which took me up five or fix days. I first travelled along the sea shore, directly to the place where I first brought my boat to an anchor, to get upon the rocks; but now having no boat to take care of, I went overland a nearer way to the fame height that I was before upon; when looking forward to the point of the rock, which lay out, and which I was forced to double with my boat, I was amazed to see the sea so smooth and quiet, their being no ripling motion, nor current, any more than in other places. This made me ponder some time to guess the reason of it, when at last I was convinced that the ebb setting from the west, and joining with the current of water from some great river on shore, must be the occasion of these rapid streams; and that, consequently, as the winds blew more westwardly, or more southwardly, so the current came the nearer, or went the farther from the shore. To satisfy my curiofity, I waited there till evening, when the time of ebb being made, I plainly perceived from the rock the current again as before, with this difference, that it ran farther off, near half a league from the shore; whereas, in my expedition, it fet close upon it, furiously hurrying

long

crea

I fa

evid

Hac

COU

gav

cou

alte

neit

it W

fo I

Ire

tree

wil

not

mu

Fo

wh

of

rea

the

fee

m

ifl of

th

I fo

VE

by

to

V

W

tı

a

me and my canoe along with it, which at another time it would not have done. And now I was convinced, that, by observing the ebbing and flowing of the tide, I might easily bring my boat round the island again. But when I began to think of putting it in practice, the remembrance of the late danger struck me with such horror, that I changed my resolution, and formed another, which was more safe, though more laborious; and this was to make another canoe, and so have one for one side of the island, and

one for the other.

I had now two plantations in the island; the first my little fortification, fort, or castle, with many large and spacious improvements: for by this time I had enlarged the cave behind me with feveral little caves, one within another, to hold my baskets, corn, and straw. The piles with which I made my wall were grown fo lofty and great as obscured my habitation. And near this commodious and pleasant settlement, lay my well-cultivated and improved corn-fields, which kindly yielded me their fruit in the proper feason. My second plantation was that near my country-feat, or little bower, where my grapes flourished, and where, having planted many stakes, I made inclosures for my goats, so strongly fortified by labour and time, that it was much stronger than a wall, and consequently impossible for them to break through. As for my bower itself, I kept it constantly in repair, and cut the trees in such a manner, as made them grow thick and wild, and form a most delightful shade. In the centre of this stood my tent, thus erected. I had driven four piles in the ground, spreading over it a piece of the ship's fail: beneath which I made a fort of a couch with the skins of the creatures I had flain, and other things; and having laid thereon one of the failor's blankets, which I had faved from the wreck of the ship, and covering myself with a great watch coat, I took up this place for my country retreat.

Very frequently from this fettlement did I use to visit my boat, and keep her in very good order. And sometimes I would venture in her a cast or two from shore, but no farther, lest either a strong current, a sudden stormy wind, or some unlucky accident should hurry me from the island as before. But now I entreat your attention, whilst I proceed to inform you of a new, but most surprising scene of life which here besel me.

it at,

tht

1 I

ce

n.

re

0-

nd

ny

a-

ne D-

es

ıt

IS

it

r

1

You may eafily suppose, that, after having been here so long, nothing could be more amazing than to fee a human creature. One day it happened, that, going to my boat, I faw the print of a man's naked foot on the shore, very evident on the fand, as the toes, heels, and every part of it. Had I feen an apparition in the most frightful shape, I could not have been more confounded. My willing ears gave the strictest attention. I cast my eyes around, but could fatisfy neither the one nor the other. I proceeded alternately to every part of the shore, but with equal effect; neither could I fee any other mark, though the fand about it was as susceptible to take impression, as that which was fo plainly stamped. Thus, struck with confusion and horror, I returned to my habitation, frightened at every bush and tree, taking every thing for men; and possessed with the wildest ideas! That night my eyes never closed. I formed nothing but the most dismal imaginations, concluding it, must be the mark of the devil's foot which I had seen. For otherwise how could any mortal come to this island? where was the ship that transported them? and what signs of any other footsteps? Though these seemed very strong reasons for such a supposition, yet (thought I) why should the devil make the print of his foot to no purpose, as I can fee, when he might have taken other ways to have terrified me? why should he leave his mark on the other side of the: island, and that too on the fand, where the furging waves of the ocean might foon have erased the impression. this action is not confistent with the subtilty of Satan, said I to myself; but rather must be some dangerous creature, fome wild favage of the main land over against me, that, venturing too far in the ocean, has been driven here, either by the violent currents or contrary winds; and not caring to flay on this desolate island, has gone back to sea again.

Happy, indeed, that I to myself, that none of the savages had seen me in that place: yet I was not altogether without fear, lest, having sound my boat, they should return in numbers and devour me, or at least carry away all my corn, and destroy my slock of tame goats. In a word, all my religious hopes vanished, as though I thought God would not now protect me by his power, who had so won-

derfully preserved me so long.

What various chains of Providence are there in the life of man? How changeable are our affections, according to different circumstances? We love to-day, what we hate

This was evident in me in the most conspicuous manner: For I, who before had so much lamented my condition, in being banished from all human-kind, was now even ready to expire, when I considered that a man had set his foot on this desolate island. But, when I considered my station of life, decreed by the infinitely wise and good providence of God, that I ought not to dispute my Creator's sovereignty, who had an unbounded right to govern and dispose of his creatures as he thinks convenient; and that his justice and mercy could either punish or deliver me: I say, when I considered all this, I comfortably found it my duty to trust sincerely in him, pray ardently to him, and humbly resign myself to his divine will.

One morning, lying on my bed, these words of the sacred writings came into my mind, "Call upon me in the "day of trouble, and I will delive thee, and thou shalt "glorify me." Upon this sentence, rising more cheerfully from my bed, I offered up my prayers in the most heavenly manner: and, when I had done, taking up my Bible to read, these words appeared first in my sight:— "Wait on the Lord, and be of good cheer, and he shall "strengthen thy heart: Wait, I say, on the Lord." Such divine comfort did this give me, as to remove all cause of

fadness upon that occasion.

Thus, after a world of apprehensions and fears, for three days and nights, I at last ventured out of my castle, and milked my goats, one of which was almost spoiled for want of it. I next (though in great fear) visited my bower, and milked my slocks there also; when, growing bolder, I went down to the shore again, and measuring the print of the foot to mine, to see perhaps whether I myself had not occasioned that mark, I found it much superior in largeness; and so returned home, now absolutely convinced, that either some men had been ashore, or that the island must be inhabited; and therefore that I might be surprised before I was aware.

I now began to think of providing for my security, and resolved in my mind many different schemes for that purpose. I first proposed to cut down my inclosures, and turn my tame cattle wild into the woods that the enemy might not find them, and frequent the island in hopes of killing the same. Secondly, I was for digging up my corn fields for the very same reason. And, lastly, I concluded to de-

moli they little

I lo

not Good ing now could my

nati nex fide be : hat figi cir the ap ha to fel of ve olo wh w

I fa w th of

in

n o le molish my bower, lest, seeing a place of human contrivance, they might come farther and find out and attack me in my little castle.

Such notions did the sear of danger suggest to me; and I looked I thought like the unfortunate king Saul, when not only oppressed by the Philistines, but also forsaken by God himself. And, it is strange, that a little before, having entirely resigned myself to the will of God, I should now have little considence in him, fearing those more who could kill this fading body, than him who could destroy

my immortal foul.

ext.

er:

, in

ady

ton

of

e of

gn-

of

ice

ien

to

oly

a-

he

lt

r-

oft:

y

11

h

f

e

1

Sleep was an utter flranger to my eyes that night; yet nature, spent and tired, submitted to a filent repose the next morning, and then joining reason with fear, I confidered, that this delightful and pleasant island might not be so entirely forfaken as I might think; but that the inhabitants from the other shore might sail, either with defign, or from necessity, by cross winds; and, if the latter circumstance, I had reason to believe they would depart the first opportunity. However, my fear made me think of a place for retreat upon an attack. I now repented that I had made my door to come out beyond my fortification; to remedy which, I resolved to make me a second one: I fell to work, therefore, and drove betwixt that double row of trees, which I planted above twelve years before, feveral strong piles, thickening it with pieces of timber and old cables, and strengthening the foot of it with earth which I dug out of my cave; I also made me seven holes, wherein I planted my muskets like cannon, fitting them into frames resembling carriages. This being finished with indefatigable industry, for a great way every where, I planted sticks of ofier like a wood, about twenty thoufand of them, leaving a large space between them and my wall, that I might have room to fee an enemy, and that they might not be sheltered among the young trees, if they offered to approach the outer wall. And, indeed, scarce two years had passed over my head, when there appeared a lovely shady grove, and in fix years it became a thick wood, perfectly impassible. For my safety, I left no avenue to go in or out; instead of which I set two ladders, one to a part of a rock which was low, and then broke in, leaving room to place another ladder upon that; fo that when I took those down, it was impossible for any man to descend without hurting himself; and if they had, they

would still be at the outside of my outer wall. But while I took all these measures of human prudence for my own preservation I was not altogether unmindful of other assairs. To preserve my stock of tame goats, that the enemy should not take all at once, I looked out for the most retired part of the island, which was the place where I had lost myself before-mentioned, and there sinding a clear piece of land, containing three acres, surrounded with thick woods, I wrought so hard, that in less than a month's time, I fenced it so well round, that my slocks were very well secured in it, and I put therein two he goats and ten she ones.

All this labour was occasioned purely by fearful apprehensions, on account of seeing the print of a man's foot. And not contented yet with what I had done, I fearched for another place towards the west point of the island, where I might also retain another flock. Then wandering on this errand more to the west of the island than ever I had yet done, and casting my eyes towards the sea, methought I perceived a boat at a great distance; but could not possibly tell what it was for want of my perspective glass: I considered then it was no strange thing to see the print of a man's foot; and, concluding them cannibuls, blessed God for being cast on the other side of the island. where none of the favages, as I thought, ever came. But when I came down the hill to the shore, which was the S. W. point of the island, I was soon confirmed in my opinion; nor can any one describe my horror and amazement, when I faw the ground spread with sculls, hands, feet, and bones of human bodies; and, particularly, I perceived a space like a circle, in the midst of which had been a fire, about which I conjectured these wretches sat, and unnaturally facrificed and devoured their fellow creatures.

The horror and loathsomeness of this dreadful spectacle, both consounded my senses, and made me discharge from my stomach in an excessive manner. I then returned towards my habitation; and, in my way thither, shedding sloods of tears, and falling down on my bended knees, gave God thanks for making my nature contrary to these wretches, and delivering me so long out of their hands.

Though reason and my long residence here had assured me, that these savages never came up to the thick woody part of the country, and that I had no reason to be apprehensive of a discovery; yet such an abhorrence did I still my to inclo my to eyes was those folve went added made

T

calm
to o
deed
with
object
dail
For
whi
for
bre
it is
I ma

my I contain that the tail

bri

pu co I do aff

di

of ar

while
own
airs.
emy
t rehad
lear
with

ten
oreoot.
hed
nd,
er-

rery

ver neuld ive

ls,
id.
it
he

es, rn

n

1-

.

retain, that, for two years after, I confined myself only to my three plantations; I mean my castle, country seat, and inclosure in the woods. And though in process of time my dreadful apprehensions began to wear away, yet my eyes were more vigilant for fear of being surprised, and I was very cautious of firing my gun, lest, being heard by those creatures, they should proceed to attack me. I resolved, however, manfully to lose my life if they did, and went armed with three pistols stuck in my girdle; which, added to the description I have given of myself before, made me look with a very formidable appearance.

Thus my circumstances for some time remained very calm and undisturbed: and when I compared my condition to others, I found it far from being miserable. deed, would all perfons compare their circumstances, not with those above them, but with those innumerable unhappy objects beneath them, I am sure we should not hear those daily murmurings and complainings that are in the world. For my part, I wanted but few things. Indeed, the terror which the favages had put me in, spoiled some inventions for my own conveniences. One of my projects was to brew me fome bear; a very whimfical one indeed, when it is confidered that I had neither casks sufficient, nor could I make any to preferve it in; neither had I hops to make it keep, yest to make it work, nor a copper or kettle to make it boil. Perhaps, indeed, after some years, I might bring this to bear, as I had done other things. But now my inventions were placed another way; and day and night I could think of nothing but how I might destroy some of these cannibals, when proceeding to their bloody entertainments; and fo faving a victim from being facrificed, that he might after become my fervant. Many were my contrivances after this purpole, and as many more objections occurred, after I hatched them. I once contrived to dig a hole under the place where they made their fire, and put therein five or fix pounds of gunpowder, which would confequently blow up all those that were near it; but then I was loth to spend so much upon them, lest it should not do that certain execution I could defire, and but only affright, and not kill them. Having laid this design aside, I again proposed to myself to lie privately in ambush, in some convenient place, with my three guns double loaded, and let fly at them in the midst of their dreadful ceremony; and having killed two or three of them at every shot, fall

m

tic

to

CO

ftr

th

de

pa

no

ar

CC

m

bl

ne

I

if

€:

f

V

11

f

d

a

1

h

upon the rest suddenly with my three pistols, and not let one mother's fon escape. This imagination pleased my fancy fo much that I used to dream of it in the night time, To put my defign in execution, I was not long feeking for a place convenient for my purpose, where unseen I might behold every action of the favages. Here I placed my two muskets, each of which was loaded with a brace of flugs, and four or five smaller bullets about the fize of pistol bullets; the fowling-piece was charged with near a handful of the largest swan shot, and in every pistol were And thus all things being prepared, about four bullets. no fooner would the welcome light spread over the element, but, like a giant refreshed with wine, as the scripture has it, would I issue forth from my castle, and from a losty hill, three miles distant, view if I could see any invaders approach unlawfully to my kingdom. But having waited in vain two or three months, it not only grew very tirefome to me, but brought me to some consideration, and made me examine myfelf, what right I had to kill these creatures in this manner.

If (argued I to myself) this unnatural custom of theirs be a fin offensive to Heaven, it belongs to the Divine Being, who alone has the vindictive power in his hands, to shower down his vengeance upon them. And perhaps he does fo, in making them become one another's executioners. if not, if God thinks these doings just, according to the knowledge they conceive, what authority have I to pretend to thwart the decrees of Providence, which has permitted these actions for so many ages, perhaps from almost the beginning of the creation? They never offended me, what right have I then to concern myfelf in their shedding one another's blood? And, indeed, I have fince known, they value no more to kill and devour a captive taken in war, than we do to kill an ox, or eat mutton. I then concluded, it necessarily followed, that these people were no more murderers than Christians, who many times put whole troops to the fword, after throwing down their arms. Again I confidered, that if I fell upon them, I should be as much in the wrong as the Spaniards, who had committed the greatest barbarities upon these people who had never offended them in their whole lives; as if the kingdom of Spain was eminent for a race of men without common compassion to the miserable, a principal sign of the most generous temper: these considerations made me pause, and

made me think I had taken wrong measures in my resolution: I now argued with myself, it was better for me never to attack, but to remain undiscovered as long as I possibly could; that an opposite conduct would certainly prove destructive; for as it was scarely to be supposed I could kill them all, I might either be overpowered by the remaining, or that some escaping, might bring thousands to my certain And, indeed, religion took their part fo destruction. much as to convince me how contrary it was to my duty to be guilty of shedding human blood, innocent as to my particular, whatever they are to one another; that I had nothing to do with it, but leave it to the God of all power and dominion, as I said before, to do therein what seemed convenient to his heavenly wisdom. And, therefore, on my knees I thanked the Almighty for delivering me from blood guiltiness, and begged his protection that I might never fall into their hands.

Thus giving over an attempt which I had rashly begun, I never ascended the hill on that occasion afterwards: I only removed my boat, which lay on the other fide of the island, and every thing that belonged to her, towards the east, into a little cove, that there might not be the least shadow of any boat near, or habitation upon the island. My castle then became my cell, keeping always retired in it, except when I went out to milk my the goats, and order my little flock in the wood, which was quite out of danger: for fure I was, that these savages never came here with expectations to find any thing, and confequently never wandered from the coast; however, as they might have several times been on shore, as well before as after my dreadful apprehensions, I looked back with horror to think in what state I might have been, had I suddenly met them slenderly armed, with one gun only loaded with small shot; and how great would have been my amazement, if, instead of feeing the print of one man's foot, I had perceived fifteen or twenty favages, who having once fet their eyes upon me, by the swiftness of their feet, would have left me no possibility of escaping? These thoughts would fink my very foul, so that I would fall into a deep melancholy, till fuch time as the confideration of my gratitude to the Divine Being moved it from my heart. I then fell into a contemplation of the sacred springs of Providence, and how wonderfully we are delivered, when infensible of it; and when intricated in uncertain mazes or labyrinths of doubt

ot let
d my
time.
eking
een I
laced
ce of
of piear a
were

lofty ders aited

ared,

and hefe

neirs

ing,

ower of, Or, the

the hat one hey

tted

ed, ore

be nitne-

om oft

nd

(th

pla

tair

row

it f

hea

aga

*ec

bra

the

At

por

no

fho

far

lov

to

the

on

T

fai

W

lir

VI

tu

of

fe:

no

th

re

hi

fi

0

fe

0

or hesitation, what secret hint directs us in the right way, when we intended to go out of it; nay, perhaps contrary to our business, sense, or inclination. Upon which, I sixed within me this as a certain rule, never to disobey those secret impressions of mind, to the acting or not acting any thing that offered, for which I yet could assign no reason. But let it be how it will, the advantage of this conduct very eminently appeared in the latter part of my abode on this island; I am a stranger in determining whence these secret imitations of Providence derive; yet methinks they are not only some proof of the converse of spirits, but also of the secret communications they are supposed to have with those that have not passed through the gloomy vale of death.

These anxieties of mind, and the care of my preservation, put a period to all suture inventions and contrivances, either for accommodation or convenience. I now cared not to drive a nail, chop a stick, fire a gun, or make a fire, lest either the noise should be heard, or the smoke discover me. And on this account I used to burn my earthen ware privately in a cave which I found in the wood, and which I made convenient for that purpose; the principal cause that brought me here was to make charcoal, so that I might bake and dress my bread and meat without any danger. At that time a curious accident happened

me, which I shall now relate.

While I was cutting down fome wood for making my charcoal, I perceived a cavity behind a very thick branch of underwood. Curious to look into it, I attained its mouth, and perceived it sufficient for me to stand upright But when I had entered, and took a further view, two rolling shining eyes, like staming stars, seemed to dart themselves at me; so that I made all the haste out that I could, as not knowing whether it was the devil or a monfler that had taken his residence in that place. When I recovered a little from my surprise, I called myself a thoufand fools, for being afraid to fee the devil one moment, who had now lived almost twenty years in the most retired folitude. And therefore resuming all the courage I had, I took up a flaming firebrand, and in I rushed again. I had not proceeded above three steps, when I was more affrighted than before; for then I heard a very loud figh, like that of a human creature in the greatest agony, succeeded with a broken noise, resembling words half expressed, and then a broken figh again. Stepping back, Lord!

ay,

ary

bey

fe-

iny

on.

uct

on

ele

ley

lfo

ve

of

a-

es,

ed

2

ke

nv

d,

17.

10

ut

bs

ly

h

ts

ht

V,

rt

I

1-

I

-

,

d

I

d

(thought I to myself) where am I got, into what enchante place have I plunged myself, such as are reported to con tain miserable captives, till death puts an end to their forrow? And, indeed, in such great amazement was I, that it struck me into a cold sweat; and had my hat been on my head, I believe my hair would have moved it off. again encouraging myself with the hopes of God's protection, I proceeded forward, and, by the light of my firebrand, perceived it to be a monstrous he-goat, lying on the ground, gasping for life, and dying of mere old age. At first I stirred him, thinking to drive him out, but the poor ancient creature strove to get upon his feet, but was not able; fo I e'en let him lie still, to affright the savages should they venture into this cave. I now looked round me, and found the place but small and shapeless. farther side of it I perceived a sort of an entrance, yet so low, as must oblige me to creep upon my hands and knees to it; fo, having no candle, I suspended my enterprise till the next day, and then I came provided with two large ones of my own making.

Having crept upon my hands and feet through this strait, I found the roof higher up, I think about twenty feet. But furely mortal never faw fuch a glorious fight before! The roof and walls of this cave reflected a hundred thoufand lights to me from my two candles, as though they were indented with shining gold, precious stones, or sparkling diamonds. And indeed it was the most delightful cavity or grotto of its kind that could be defired, though entirely dark. The floor was dry and level, and had a kind of gravel upon it; no nauleous venomous creatures to be feen there, neither any damp or wet about it. I could find no fault but in the entrance, and I began to think that even this might be very necessary for my defence, and therefore resolved to make it my most principal magazine. I brought hither two fowling pieces and three muskets, leaving only five pieces at my castle, planted in the nature of cannon. Of the barrel of gunpowder, which I took up out of the fea, I brought away about fixty pounds of good powder, which was not damaged; and this, with a great quantity of lead for bullets, I removed from my castle to this retreat, now fortified both by art and nature.

I fancied myself now like one of the giants of old, who were said to live in caves and holes among the rocks, in-

accessible to any but themselves, or, at least, most dangerous attempt. And now I despised both the cunning and strength of the savages, either to find me out or to hurt me.

fic I

m

bl

of

till

lig

the

me

wi

na

po

wa

eat

cia

COI

car

tha

if t

juf

and

we

gei

me

faw

pla

han

ma hac

pla

lan

to 1

ma

and

I lo

tha

frec

pre

1

But I must not forget the old goat, which caused my late dreadful amazement. The poor creature gave up the ghost the day after my discovery; and it being difficult to drag him out, I dug his grave, and honourably entombed him in the same place where he departed, with as much ceremony as any Welch goat that has been interred about the high

mountain Penmanmawr.

I think I was now in the twenty-third year of my reign, and my thoughts much easier than formerly, having contrived several pretty amusements and diversions to pass away the time in a pleasant manner. By this time my pretty Poll had learned to speak English, and pronounce his words very articulately and plain; fo that for many hours we used to chat together after a familiar manner, and he lived with me no less than twenty-fix years. My dog which was nineteen years old, fixteen of which he lived with me, died some time ago of mere old age. As for my cats, they multiplied fo fast, that I was forced to kill or drive them into the woods, except two or three which became my particular favourites. Besides these, I continually kept two or three household kids about me, which I learned to feed out of my hand, and two more parrots which could talk indifferently, and call Robinson Crusoe. but not fo excellently as the first, as not taking that pains I had also several sea fowls which I had with them. wounded and cut their wings; and growing tame, they used to breed among the low trees about my castle-walls, all which made my abode very agreeable.

But what unforeseen events suddenly destroy the enjoyments of this uncertain state of life, when we least expect them! It was now the month of December, in the southern solstice, and particular time of my harvest, which required my attendance in the fields; when going out pretty early one morning, before it was day-light, there appeared to me, from the sea shore, a slaming light, about two miles from me at the east end of the island, where I had observed some savages had been before, not on the other side, but to my great affliction, it was on my side the

island.

d

rt

e

st

n

y

h

1,

s

y

e

y

,

d

y

-

I

S

,

d

-

y

0

d

r

e

Struck with a terrible furprise, and my usual apprehenfions, that the favages would perceive my improvements, I returned directly to my castle, pulled the ladder after me, making all things look as wild and natural as I postibly could. In the next place, I put myself into a posture of defence, loading my mulkets and pistols, and committing myself to God's protection, I resolved to defend myself till my last breath. Two hours after, impatient for intelligence, I fet my ladder up to the fide of the hill, where there was a flat place, and then pulling the ladder after me, ascended to the top, where laying myself on my belly, with my perspective glass, I perceived no less than nine naked sayages, sitting round a small fire, eating, as I supposed human flesh, with their two canoes haled on shore, waiting for the flood to carry them off again. You cannot easily express the consternation I was in at this fight, especially seeing them near me; but when I perceived their coming must be always with the current of the ebb, I became more easy in my thoughts, being fully convinced that I might go abroad with security all the time of flood, if they were not before landed. And, indeed, this proved just as I imagined; for no sooner did they all take boat and paddle away, but the tide made N. W. Before they went off, they danced, making ridiculous postures, and gestures for above an hour, all stark naked; but whether men or women, or both, I could not perceive: When I faw them gone, I took two guns upon my shoulders, and placing a couple of pistols in my belt, with my great sword hanging by my fide, I went to the hill, where at first I made a discovery of these cannibals, and then saw there had been three canoes more of the favages on shore at that place, which with the rest were making over to the main land.

But nothing could be more horrid to me, when going to the place of facrifice, the blood, the bones, and other mangled parts of human bodies appeared in my fight: and so fired was I with indignation, that I was fully refolved to be revenged on the first that came there, though I lost my life in the execution. It then appeared to me, that the visits which they make to this island are not very frequent, it being fifteen months before they came again: but still I was very uneasy, by reason of the dismal apprehensions of their surprising me unawares; nor dared I

Do

offer to fire a gun on that side of the island where they used to appear, lest, taking the alarm, the savages might return with many hundred canoes, and then God knows in what manner I should have made my end. Thus was I a year or more before I saw any of these devouring cannibals again.

w

of

un

the

th

fte

ve

th

m

th:

up

th

th

tic

CO

th

pe

WI

w

in

44

..

I

66

ta

pa

w

th

ec

ne

m

a

ar

But to wave this, the following accident, which demands attention for a-while, eluded the force of my thoughts in

revenging myself on those Heathens.

On the 16th of May (according to my wooden calendar) the wind blew exceeding hard, accompanied with abundance of lightening and thunder all day, and succeeded by a very stormy night. The seeming anger of the Heavens made me have recourse to my Bible. Whilst I was serioully pondering upon it, I was fuddenly alarmed with the noise of a gun, which I conjectured was fired upon the ocean. Such an unusual surprise made me start up in a minute, when, with my ladder ascending the mountain as before, that very moment a flash of fire presaged the report of another gun, which I presently heard, and found it was from that part of the fea where the current drove me away. I could not but then think, that this must be a ship in distress, and that these were the melancholy signals for a speedy deliverance. Great, indeed, was my forrow upon this occasion; but my labours to assist them must have proved altogether vain and fruitless. However, I brought together all the dry wood that was at hand, and making a pretty large pile, fet it on fire on the hill. I was certain they plainly perceived it, by their firing another gun as foon as it began to blaze, and after that several more from the same quarter. All night long I kept up my fire : and when the air cleared up, I perceived something a great way at sea, directly E. but could not distinguish what it was, even with my glass, by reason the weather was so very foggy out at sea. However, keeping my eyes directly fixed upon it, and perceiving it did not stir, I presently concluded it must be a ship at anchor, and so very hasty I was to be fatisfied, that taking my gun, I went to the S. E. part of the island, to the same rocks where I had been formerly drove away by the current; in which time the weather being perfectly cleared up, to my great forrow, I perceived the wreck of a ship cast away upon those hidden rocks I found when I was out with my boat; and

which, by making a kind of an eddy, were the occasion

of my prefervation.

ey

tht

in

a

als

ds

in

r)

d-

a

ns

i-

10

10

a

15

rt

LS

1.

.

a

n

e

t

Thus, what is one man's fafety, is another's ruin; for undoubtedly this ship had been driven on them in the night, the wind blowing strong at E. N. E. Had they perceived the island, as I now guessed they had not, certainly, instead of firing their guns for help, they would rather have ventured in their boat, and faved themselves that way. I then thought, that perhaps they had done fo, upon feeing my fire, and were cast away in the attempt; for I perceived no boat in the ship. But then I again imagined, that, perhaps, they had another vessel in company, which, upon fignal, faved their lives, and took the boat up: or that the boat might be driven into the main ocean, where these poor creatures might be in the most miserable condition. But as all these conjectures were very uncertain, I could do no more than commiserate their distress, and thank God for delivering me, in particular, when so many perished in the raging ocean.

When I considered seriously every thing concerning this wreck, and could perceive no room to suppose any of them saved, I cannot explain, by any possible force of words, what longings my soul selt on this occasion, often breaking out in this manner: "O that there had been but two or three, nay even one person saved, that we might have lived together, conversed with, and comforted one another!" and so much were my defires moved, that when I repeated these words, "Oh! that there had been but one!" my hands would clench together, and my singers press the palms of my hands so close, that, had any soft thing been between, it would have crushed it involuntarily, while my teeth would strike together, and set against each other so strong, that it required some time for me to

part them.

Till the last year of my being on this island, I never knew whicher or not any had been saved out of this ship. I had the affliction, some time after, to see the corpse of a drowned boy come on shore, at the end of the island which was next the shipwreck; there was nothing on him but a seaman's waistcoat, a pair of open-kneed linen drawers, and a blue linen shirt, but no particular mark to guess what nation he was of. In his pocket were two pieces of eight, and a tobacco-pipe, the last of which I preferred much more than I did the first. And now the calmness of the

no

di

21

th

th

t

0

n

n

fea ampted me to venture out in my boat to this wreck, not only to get something necessary out of the ship, but, perhaps, some living creature might be on board, whole life I might preserve. This had such an influence upon my mind, that immediately I went home, and prepared every thing necessary for the voyage, carrying on board my boat provisions of all forts, with a good quantity of rum, fresh water, and a compass: so putting off, I paddled the cance along the shore, till I came at last to the north-east part of the island, from whence I was to launch into the ocean; but here the currents ran so violently, and appeared so terrible, that my heart began to fail me; forefeeing, that if I was driven into any of these currents, I might be carried not only out of the reach or fight of the island, but even inevitably lost in the boiling surges of the ocean.

So oppressed was I at these troubles, that I gave over my enterprize, sailing to a little creek on the shore, where, stepping out, I sat me down on a rising hill, very pensive and thoughtful. I then perceived that the tide was turned, and the shood came on, which made it impracticable for she to go out for so many hours. To be more certain how the sets of the tides or currents lay when the shood came in, I ascended a higher piece of ground, which overlooked the sea both ways; and here I found, that as the current of the ebb set out close by the south point of the island, so the current of the shood set in close by the shore of the north side; and all that I had to do, was to keep to the north of

the island in my return.

That hight I reposed myself in my canoe, covered with my watch coat instead of a blanket, the heavens being my teffer. I fet out with the first of the tide full north, till I felt the benefit of the current, which carried me at a great rate eastward, yet not with such impetuosity as before, as to take from me all government of my canoe; so that in two hours time I came up to the wreck, which appeared to me a most melancholy fight. It seemed to be a Spanish vessel by its building, stuck fast between two rocks; her ftern and quarter beaten to pieces by the sea; her mainmast and foremast were brought off by the board; that is broken off short. As I approached near, I perceived a dog on board, who, feeing me coming, yelped and cried; and no fooner did I call him, but the poor creature jumped into the sea, out of which I took him up, almost famished with hunger and thirst; so that when I gave him a cake of bread,

no ravenous wolf could devour it more greedily; and he drank to that degree of fresh water, that he would have

burst himself, had I suffered him.

eck,

but,

hole

pon

ared

pard

y of

oad-

the

nch

and

ore-

, I

the

the

ver

re,

ive

rn-

for

OW

in,

he

of

he

th

of

th

14

1

at

as

in

0

h

r

s

The first fight I met with in the ship, were two men drowned in the coek-room or forecastle, inclosed in one another's arms: hence I very probably supposed, that when the vessel struck in the storm; so high and incessantly did the waters break in and over her, that the men not being able to bear it, were strangled by the constant rushing in of the waves. There were several casks of liquor, whether wine or brandy I could not be positive, which lay in the lower hold, as were plainly perceptible by the ebbing out of the water, yet were too large for me to pretend to meddle with: likewise I perceived several chests, which I supposed to belong to the seamen, two of which I got into my boat, without examining what was in them. Had the stern of the ship been fixed, and the forepart broken off, I should have made a very prosperous voyage; since, by what I after found in these two chests, I could not otherwife conclude, but that the ship must have abundance of wealth on board; nay, if I must guess by the course she steered, she must have been bound from the Buenos Ayres, or the Rio de la Plata, in the southern parts of America, beyod the Brazils, to the Havannah, in the gulph of Mexico, and so perhaps to Spain. What became of the rest of the failors, I could not certainly tell; and all her riches lignified nothing at that time to any body.

Searching farther, I found a cask, containing about twenty gallons, full of liquor, which with some labour I got into my boat; in a cabin were feveral muskets, which I let remain there, but took away with me a great powder horn, with about four pounds of powder in it. I took also a fire shovel and tongs, two brass kettles, a copper pot to make chocolate, and a gridiron; all which were extremely necessary to me, especially the fire shovel and tongs. fo with this cargo, accompanied with my dog, I came away, the tide serving for that purpose; and the same evening, about an hour within night, I attained the island, after the

greatest toil and fatigue imaginable.

That night I reposed my wearied limbs in the boat, refolving the next morning to harbour what I had gotten in my new-found fubterraneous grotto; and not to carry my cargo home to my ancient castle. Having refreshed myfelf, and got all my effects on shore, I next proceeded to

D 4

ftil

the

th

to

W

W

m

de

examine the particulars; and so tapping the cask, I found the liquor to be a kind of rum, but not like what we had at the Brazils, nor indeed near so good. At the opening of the cheft, feveral things appeared very useful to me; for instance, I found in one a very fine case of bottles, containing the finest and best forts of cordial waters; each bottle held about three pints, curiously tipt with filver. I found also two pots full of the choicest sweetmeats, and two more which the water had utterly spoiled. There were likewise several good shirts exceeding welcome to me, and about one dozen and a half white linen handkerchiefs and coloured neckcloths, the former of which was absolutely necessary for wiping my face in a hot day; and, in the till, I found three bags of pieces of eight, about eleven hundred in all, in one of which, decently wrapt up in a piece of paper, were fix doubloons of gold, and some small bars and wedges of the same metal, which I believe might weigh near a pound. In the other cheft, which I gueffed to belong to the gunner's mate, by the mean circumstances that attended it, I only found some clothes of very little value, except about two pounds of fine glazed powder, in three flasks, kept, as I believe, for charging their fowling pieces on any occasion; so that, on the whole, I had no great advantage by this voyage. The money was indeed as mere dirt to me, useless and unprofitable, all which I would have freely parted with for two or three pair of English shoes and stockings, things that for many years I had not worn, except lately those which I had taken off the feet of those unfortunate men I found drowned in the wreck, yet not so good as English shoes either for ease or service. I also found in the seaman's chest about fifty pieces of eight in royals, but no gold; fo concluded that what I took from the first belonged to an officer, the latter appearing to have a much inferior person for its owner. However, as despicable as the money seemed, I likewise lugged it to my cave, laying it up securely, as I did the rest of my cargo: and after I had done all this, I returned back to my boat, rowing and paddling her along till I came to my old harbour, where I carefully laid her up, and so made the best of my way to my castle. When I arrived there, every thing feemed fafe and quiet: fo that now my only business was to repose myself after my wonted manner, and take care of my domestic affairs. But tho' I might have lived very easy, as wanting for nothing absolutely needful; yet

still I was more vigilant than usual upon account of the savages, never going much abroad; or, if I did, it was to the east part of the island, where I was well assured that the savages never came, and where I might not be troubled to carry that heavy load of weapons for my defence, as I

was obliged to do if I went the other way.

Two years did I live in this anxious condition, in all which time, contrary to my former resolutions, my head was filled with nothing but projects and designs, how I might escape from this island; and so much were my wandering thought bent upon a rambling disposition, that had I had the same boat that I went from Sallee in, I should have ventured once more to the uncertainty of the raging ocean.

I cannot, however, but confider myself as one of the unhappy persons, who make themselves wretched by their distatisfaction with the stations which God has placed them in; for, not to take a review of my primitive condition, and my father's excellent advice, the going contrary to which was, as I may say, my original sin, the following mistakes of the same nature certainly had been the means of my present unhappy station. What business had I to leave a settled fortune, and well stocked plantation, improving and increasing, where, by this time, I might have been worth a hundred thousand moidores, to turn supercargo to Guinea, to setch Negroes, when time and patience would so much enlarged my stock at home, as to be able to employ those whose more immediate business it was to setch them home, even to my door?

But as this is commonly the fate of young heads, so a ferious reslection upon the folly of it ordinarily attends the exercise of suture years, when the dear bought experience of time teaches us repentance. Thus was it with me; but notwithstanding the thoughts of my deliverance ran so strongly in my mind, that it seemed to check all the dictates of reason and philosophy. And now to usher in my kind reader with great pleasure to the remaining part of my relation, I flatter myself it will not be taken amiss, to give him an account of my first conceptions of the manner of escaping, and upon what foundation I laid my soolish

ichemes.

ind

ad

ng

le;

n-

ch

I

nd

re

le,

efs

0-

in

n

a

Ill

nt

d

es

le

n

g

d

I

1

Having retired to my castle, after my late voyage to the ship, my frigate laid up and secured, as usual, and my condition the same as before, except being richer, though

11

I had as little occasion for riches as the Indians of Peru had for gold, before the cruel Spaniards came among them: One night in March, being the rainy season, in the four and twentieth year of my folitude, I lay down to fleep, very well in health, without diftemper, pain, or uncommon uneafiness, either of body or mind; yet, notwithflanding, I could not compose myself to sleep all the night All this tedious while it is impossible to express what innumerable thoughts came into my head. I traced quite over the whole history of my life in miniature, from my utmost remembrance of things till I came to this island; and then proceeded to examine every action and passage that had occurred fince I had taken possession of my king-In my reflections upon the latter, I was comparing the happy posture of my affairs in the beginning of my reign, to this life of anxiety, fear, and concern, fince I had discovered a print of a foot in the fand; that while I continued without apprehension, I was incapable of feeling the dread and terror I now fuffered. How thankful rather ought I to have been for the knowledge of my danger, fince the greatest happiness one can be possessed of is to have sufficient time to provide against it? How stupendous is the goodness of Providence, which sets such narrow bounds to the fight and knowledge of human nature, that while men walk in the midst of so many dangers they are kept serene and calm, by having the events of things hid from their eyes, and knowing nothing of those many dangers that furround them, till perhaps they are diffipated and vanish away.

When I came more particularly to consider of the real danger I had for so many years escaped; how I had walked about in the greatest security and tranquillity, at a time, perhaps, when even nothing but the brow of a hill, a great tree, or the common approach of night, had interposed between me and the destructive hands of the cannibals, who would devour me with as good an appetite, as I would a pigeon or curlew; surely all this, I say, could not but make me sincerely thankful to my great Preserver, whose singular protection I acknowledge with the greatest humility, and without which I must inevitably have fallen

into the cruel hands of those devourers.

Having thus discussed my thoughts in the clearest manner, according to my weak understanding, I next proceeded to consider the wretched nature of those destroying eru

ong

in

to

un-

th-

ght

els

ed

om d;

ge

g-

ng

I

le

g

er

r,

0

V

favages, by feeming, though with great reverence, to inquire, why God should give up any of his creatures to such inhumanity, even to brutality itself, to devour its own kind? but as this was rather matter of obstruse speculation, and as my miserable situation made me think this of mine the most uncomfortable situation in the world, I then began rather to inquire what part of the world these wretches lived in; how far off the coast was from whence they came; why they ventured over so far from home; what kind of boats conveyed them hither; and why I could not order myself and my business so, that I might be as able to attain their

country, as they were to come to my kingdom?

But then, thought I, how shall I manage myself when I come thither? what will become of me if I fall into the hands of the favages? or how shall I escape from them, if they make an attempt upon me? and supposing I should not fall into their power, what shall I do for provision, or which way shall I bend my course? These counter thoughts threw me into the greatest horror and confusion imaginable; but then I still looked upon my present condition to be the most miserable that possibly could be, and that nothing could be worse, except death. For (thought 1) could I but attain the shore of the main, I might perhaps meet with some relief, or coast it along, as I did with my boy Xury, on the African shore, till I came to some inhabited country, where I might meet with some relief, or fall in with some Christian ship that might take me in; and if I failed, why then I could but meet with death, which would put an end to all my miseries. These thoughts, I must confess, were the fruit of a distempered mind, an impatient temper made desperate, as it were, by long continuance of the troubles and disappointments I had met with in the wreck, where I hoped to have found some living person to speak to, by whom I might have known in what place I was, and of the probable means of my deliverance. Thus, while my thoughts were agitated, my refignation to the will of Heaven was entirely suspended! so that I had no power to fix my mind to any thing, but to the project of a voyage to the main land. And indeed so much was I inflamed upon this account, that it fet my blood into a ferment, and my pulse beat high, as though I had been in a fever; till nature being, as it were, fatigued and exhausted with the very thoughts of it, made me submit myself to a filent repose.

D 6

Fo

had

ge

or

fpi

sig

PI

re

to

1

In such a situation, it is very strange, that I did not dream of what I was so intent upon; but, instead of it, my mind roved on a quite different thing, altogether foreign. I dreamed, that as I was iffuing from my castle one morning, as customary, when I perceived upon the shore two canoes and eleven favages coming to land, who had brought with them another Indian, whom they designed to make a facrifice of, in order to devour; but just as they were going to give the fatal blow, methought the poor defigned victim jumped away, and ran directly into my little thick grove before my fortification, to abfoond from his enemies; when perceiving that the others did not follow him that way, I appeared to him; that he humbly kneeled down before me, seeming to pray for my assistance; upon which I shewed him my ladder, made him ascend, carried him to my cave, and he became my servant; and when I had gotten this man, I faid to myfelf, now furely I may have some hopes to attain the main land; for this fellow will serve me as a pilot, tell me what to do, and where I must go for provisions, what places to shun, what to venture to, and what to escape. But when I awaked, and found all these inexpressible impressions of joy entirely vanished, I fell into the greatest dejection of spirit imaginable.

Yet this dream brought me to reflect, that one fure way of escaping was to get a savage; that after I had ventured my life to deliver him from the bloody jaws of his devourers, the natural sense he might have of such a preservation, might inspire him with a lasting gratitude and most sincere affection. But then this objection reasonably interposed: how can I effect this, thought I, without I attack a whole company of them, and kill them all? why should I proceed on such a desperate attempt, which my scruples before had fuggested to be unlawful? and indeed my heart trembled at the thoughts of so much blood, though it were a means to procure my deliverance. 'Tis true, I might reasonably enough suppose these men to be real enemies to my life, men who would devour me, was it in their power: fo that it was felf preservation in the highest degree to free myself, by attacking them in my own defence, as lawfully as if they were actually affaulting me: though all these things, I fay, seemed to me to be of the greatest weight, yet, as I just said before, the dreadful thoughts of shedding human blood, struck such a terror to my soul, that it was a long

time before I could reconcile myfelf to it.

not

my

gn.

ng,

oes ith

ri-

to

im

ve

en

I

re

1

to

d

re

11

ft

I

But how far will the ardency of desire prompt us on? For notwithstanding the many disputes and perplexities I had with myself, I at length resolved, right or wrong, to get one of these savages into my hands, cost what it would, or even though I should lose my life in the attempt. Inspired with this firm resolution, I set all my wits at work, to find out what methods I should take to answer my design: this, indeed, was so difficult a task, that I could not pitch upon any probable means to execute it: I, therefore, resolved continually to be in a vigilant posture, to perceive when the savages came on shore, and to leave the rest to

the event, let the opportunities offer as they would. Such were my fixed resolutions; and accordingly I set myself upon the scout, as often as I could, till such time as I was heartily tired of it. I waited for above a year and a half, the greatest part of which I went out to the west, and south-west corner of the island, almost every day, to look for canoes; but none appeared. This was a very great discouragement; yet, though I was very much concerned, the edge of my defign was as keen as ever, and the longer it seemed to be delayed, the more eager was I for it: in a word, I never before was so careful to shun the loathing fight of these savages; as I was now eager to be with them; and I thought myself sufficiently able to manage one, two, or three favages, if I had them, so as to make them my entire slaves, to do whatsoever I should direct them, and prevent their being able at any time to do me a mischief. Many times did I use to please myself with these thoughts, with long and ardent expectations; but nothing presenting, all my deep projected schemes and numerous fancies vanished away, as though, while I retained such thoughts, the decree of Providence was such,

About a year and a half after, when I was feriously musing of sundry other ways how I should attain my end, one morning early I was very much surprised by seeing no less than five canoes all on shore together, on my side the island, and the savages that belonged to them all landed, and out of my sight. Such a number of them disconcerted all my measures; for, seeing so many boats, each of which would contain six, and sometimes more, I could not tell what to think of it, or how to order my measures, to attack twenty or thirty men single-handed: upon which, much dispirited and perplexed, I lay still in

that no favages were to come near me.

wh

gai

cei

no

po

ve

wr

mı

no

hi

fu

fer

in

fa

th

to

01

tı

tl

fa

a

tl

d

my cafile; which, however, I put in a proper posture for an attack; and, having formerly provided all that was necessary, was soon ready to enter upon an engagement, should they attempt. Having waited for some time, my impatient temper would let me bear it no longer; I set my guns at the foot of my ladder, and, as usual, ascended up to the top of the hill at two stages, standing, however, in such a manner, that my head did not appear above the hill, so that they could not easily perceive me: and here, by the assistance of my perspective glass, I observed no less than thirty in number around a fire, feasting upon what meat they had dressed: how they cooked it, or what it was, I could not then persectly tell; but they were all dancing and capering aboat the stames, using many frightful and

barbarous gestures.

But while, with a curious eye, I was beholding thefe wretches, my spirits sunk within me, when I perceived them drag two miserable creatures from the boats, to act afresh the dreadful tragedy, as I supposed they had done before. It was not long before one of them fell upon the ground, knocked down, as I suppose, with a club or wooden fword, for that was their manner; while two or three others went immediately to work, cutting him open for their cookery, and then fell to devour him as they had done the former, while the last unhappy captive was left by himself, till such time as they were ready for him. poor creature looked round him with a wishful eye, trembling at the thoughts of death; yet, feeing himself a little at liberty, nature, that very moment, as it were, inspired him with hopes of life: He started away from them, and ran, with incredible swiftness, along the fands, directly to that part of the coast where my ancient and venerable castle flood.

You may well imagine, I was dreadfully affrighted upon this occasion, when, as I thought, they pursued him in a whole body, all running towards my palace. And now, indeed, I expected that part of my dream was going to be fulfilled, and that he would certainly fly to my grove for protection; but, for the rest of my dream, I could depend nothing on it, that the savages would pursue him thither, and find him there. However, my spirits beginning to recover, I still kept upon my guard; and I now plainly perceived, there were but three men out of the number that pursued him. I was infinitely pleased with

what swiftness the poor creature ran from his pursuers gaining so much ground upon them, that I plainly perceived, could he thus hold out for half an hour, there was not the least doubt but he would save his life from the

power of his enemies.

for .

ne-

uld

ient.

the

ha

fo

the

eat, I

ing ind i

ele .

ed

ne :

act

he

en

ee or

ad

y

n-

le

ed

d

le

n

1,

o

n -

V

he :

Between them and my castle there was a creek, that very fame which I failed into with all my effects from the wreck of the ship, on the steep banks of which I very much feared the poor victim would be taken, if he could not swim for his escape: But soon was I out of pain for him, when I perceived he made nothing of it, though at full tide, but, with an intrepid courage, spurred on by the fense of danger, he plunged into the flood, swimming over in about thirty strokes, and then landing, ran with the fame incredible strength and swiftness as before. When the three pursuers came to the creek, one of them, who I perceived could not fwim, happily for his part, returned to his company, while the others, with equal courage, but much less swiftness, attained the other side, as though they were refolved never to give over the pursuit. of never I thought was the time for me to procure me a fervant, companion, or affiftant: and that I was decreed by Providence to be the instrument to save this poor creature's life. I immediately descended my two ladders with the greatest expedition; I took up my two guns, which, I faid before, were at the bottom of them: and getting up again with the same haste towards the hill, I made nearer the sea. In a word, taking a short cut down the hill, I interpoled between the pursuers and pursued, hallooing aloud to the latter, who, venturing to look back, was, no doubt, as much terrified at me as I at them. I beckoned to him, with my hand, to return back, in the mean time advancing towards the purfuers, and rushing on the foremoit, I knocked him down with the stock of my piece, and laid him flat on the ground. I was very unwilling to fire lest the rest should hear, though at a distance, I questioned whether they could or no; and being out of fight of the smoke, they could not easily have known what to make The other favage seeing his fellow fall, stopped as if he had been amazed: when, advancing towards him, I could perceive him take his bow from his back, and, fixing an arrow to it, was preparing to shoot at me, and, without dispute, might have lodged the arrow in my breast; but, in this absolutely necessary case of self-preservation, I

Immediately fired at him, and shot him dead, just as his hand was going to draw the fatal string. All this while, the favage who had fled before flood still, and had the fatisfaction to see his enemies killed, as he thought, who defigned to take away his life: fo affrighted was he with the fire and noise of my piece, that he stood as it were like Lot's wife, fixed and immoveable, without either fense or motion. This obliged me to holloo to him again, making the plainest signs I could to him to draw nearer. I perceived he understood those tokens by his approaching to me a little way, when, as if afraid I should kill him too, he stopped again. Several times did he advance, and as often stop in this manner, till, coming more to my view, I perceived him trembling, as if he was to undergo the fame fate. Upon which I looked upon him with a smiling countenance, and still beckoning to him; at length he came close to me and kneeled down, kissed the ground, laid his head upon it, and taking me by the foot, fet it upon his head; and this, as I understood afterwards, was a token of swearing to be my slave for ever. I took him up, and, making much of him, encouraged him in the best manner I could. But my work was not yet finished; for I perceived the favage whom I knocked down, was not killed, but flunned with the blow, and began to come to himself. Upon which I pointed to my new servant, and shewed him that his enemy was not yet expired, he spoke fome words to me, but which I could not understand; yet being the first found of a man's voice I had heard for above twenty five years, they were very pleasing to me. But there was no time for reflection now, the wounded favage recovering himself so far as to sit upon the ground, which made my poor prisoner as much afraid as before: to put him out of which fear, I presented my other gun at the man, with an intent to shoot him; but my savage, for so I must now call him, prevented my firing, by making a motion to me, to lend him my sword, which hung naked in my belt by my fide. No sooner did I grant his request, but away he runs to his enemy, and at one blow cut off his head as dexteroully as the most accomplished executioner in Germany could have done; for, it feems, these creatures make use of wooden swords made of hard wood which will bear edge enough to cut off heads and arms at one blow. When this valorous exploit was done, he comes to me laughing, as a token of triumph, delivered me my

fwo it a at

to the Uj

the

wa

Fi ing in bo

fi

21

m a m a

h

sword again, with abundance of surprising gestures, laying it along, with the bleeding and ghastly head of the Indian

at my feet.

s his

vhile,

ie fa-

o de-

h the

like

le or

king

per-

g to

too,

d as

w, I

ame

ling

he

ind,

t it

was

nim

the

d;

vas

me

nd

ke

et

ve

ut

ge

ch

ut

ne

fo

2

d

ŀ,

13

r

t

The greatest astonishment that my new servant conceived was the manner of killing the favage at such a distance, without a bow and arrow: and fuch was his longing defire to know it, that he first pointed to the dead carcase, and then made figns to me to grant him leave to go to him. Upon which I bid him go, and, as well as I could, made him sensible I granted his request. But when he came there, how wonderfully was he struck with amazement! First he turned him on one side, then on another, wondering he could perceive no quantity of blood, he bleeding inwardly: and after fufficiently admiring the wound the bullet had made in his breast, he took up his bow and arrows, and came back again; upon which I turned to go away, making my figns to him to follow, left the rest misfing their companions, might come in pursuit of them, and this I found he understood very well, by his making me understand that his design was to bury them, that they might not be feen if it happened; and which by figns again I made him fensible I very much approved of. mediately he fell to work, and never was grave-digger more dexterous in the world than he was; for in an instant, as I might fay, he scraped a large hole in the fands with his hands, fufficient to bury the first in; there he dragged him, and without any ceremony he covered him over; in like manner he ferved the other: fo that I am fure no undertaker could be more expert in his business; for all this was done in less than a quarter of an hour. I then called him away, and instead of carrying him directly to my castle at first, I conveyed him to my cave on the farther part of the island; and so my dream was now fulfilled in that particular, that my grove should prove an asylum or fanctuary to him.

Weary and faint, hungry and thirsty, undoubtedly must this poor creature be, supported chiesly by the vivacity of spirit, and uncommon transports of joy that his deliverance occasioned. Here I gave him bread and a bunch of raisins to eat, and water to drink, on which he sed very cheerfully, to his exceeding resreshment. I then made him a convenient bed with a parcel of rice straw, and a blanket upon it, (a bed which I used myself sometimes) and then

thi

fits

dia

del

we

tha

an

the

th

ce

je

u

A

I

b

1

pointing to it, made figns for him to lie down to fleep, upon which the poor creature went to take a welcome re-

pose.

Indeed he was a very comely, handsome, young fellow, extremely well made, with straight long limbs, not too large, but tall and well shaped, and, as near as I could reckon, about twenty-fix years of age. His countenance had nothing in it fierce or furly, but rather a fort of majefly in his face; and yet, especially when he smiled, he had all the sweetness and softness of an European. His hair was not curled like wool, as many of the blacks are, but long and black, with the most beautiful, yet careless tresses spreading over his shoulders. He had a very high and large forehead, with a great vivacity and sparkling sharpnels in his eyes. His skin was not so tawney as the Virginians, Brazilians, or other Americans; but rather of a bright dun, olive colour, that had fomething agreeable in it, though not very easy to give a description of. His face was round and plump, with a small nose, very different from the flatness of the negroes, a pretty small mouth, thin lips, fine teeth, very well fet, and white as the driven fnow. In a word, such handsome features, and exact symmetry in every part, made me confider, that I had faved the life of an Indian prince, no less graceful and accomplished than the great Oroonoko, whose memorable behaviour and unhappy contingencies of life have charmed the world, both to admiration of his person, and compastion to his fufferings.

But let him be either prince or peasant, all my happing ness centered in this, that I had now got a good servant or companion, to whom, as he deferved, I was refolved to prove a kind master and lasting friend. He had not, I think, flept above an hour, when he awakened again, and while I was milking my goats hard by, out he runs from the cave towards me in my inclosure, and laying himself down on the ground, in the lowest prostration, made all the antic gestures imaginable, to express his thankfulness to me for being his deliverer. I confess, though the manner of his behaviour feemed to be ludicrous enough to occasion laughter; yet I was very much moved at his affection, so that my heart melted within me, fearing he might die away in excess of joy, like reprieved malefactors; especially as I was incapable either to let him blood, or administer physic. It were to be wished, that Christians would take example by

sleep,

e re-

llow,

t too

could

ance

jefty

d all

Was

long

effes

and

arp-

rgi-

of a

e in

face

rent

ith,

ven

cact

nad

ac-

ble

ed

af-.

01-

or

ve

k,

I

ve

ne

es

15

ır

t

this Heathen, to have a lasting remembrance of the benefits and deliverances they have received, by the kind mediation and powerful interposition of their benefactors and
deliverers; and it would likewise be happy for mankind,
were there no occasion to blame many, who, instead of
thankfully acknowledging favours and benefits, rather abuse
and condemn those who have been the instruments to save
them from destruction.

But, leaving these just reslections, I return to the object that occasioned them; for my man, to conclude the last ceremony of obedience, laid down his head again on the ground, close to my foot, and fet my other foot upon his head, as he had done before, making all the figns of fubjection, servitude, and submission imaginable, and let me understand he would serve me as long as his life endured. As Funderstood him in many things, I made him sensible I was very well pleased with him; and, in a little time, I began to speak to him, and learn him how to talk to me In the first place, I made him understand his name was to be Friday, because it was upon that day I saved his life: then I taught him to fay Master, which I made him fensible was to be my name. I likewise taught him to say Yes and No, and to know what they meant. I gave him fome milk in an earthen pot, making him view me while I drank it before him, and soaked my bread in it; I gave him a cake of bread, and caused him to soak it likewise, to which he readily confented, making figns of the greatest satisfaction imaginable.

All that night did I keep him there; but no fooner did the morning light appear, when I ordered him to arise, and come along with me, with certain tokens that I would give him some clothes like mine, at which he seemed very glad, being stark naked, without the least covering whatever. As we passed by the place where the two men had been interred, my man pointed directly to their graves, shewing me the marks that he had made to find them again, giving me to understand, by figns, that we should dig them up, and devour them. At this I appeared extremely displeafed, expressed my utmost abhorrence, as if I would vomit at the apprehensions of it, beckoning with my hand to come away, which he did with the greatest reverence and submission. After this I conducted him to the top of the hill, to view if the rest of the savages were yet remaining there; but when I looked through my perspective glass, I

could see no appearance of them, nor of their canoes; so that it was very evident they never minded their deceased companions whom we had slain; which if they had, they would surely have searched for, or left one boat behind for them to follow, after they returned from their pursuit.

Curiofity, and a defire of fatisfaction, animating me with courage to see this scene of barbarity, I took my man Fri. day with me, putting a fword into his hand, with the bow and arrows at his back, which I perceived he could use very dexterously, causing him to carry one gun for me, and I two for myself; and thus equipped against all attacks, away we marched directly to the place of their bloody entertainment. But when I came there, I was fruck with the utmost horror at so dreadful a spectacle, whilst Friday was no way concerned about it, being no doubt in his turn one of these devourers. Here lay several human bones, there several pieces of mangled flesh, half eaten, mangled and scorched, whilst streams of blood ran promiscously as waters from a fountain. As I was musing on this dreadful fight, Friday took all the pains he could, by particular figns, to make me understand, that they had brought over four prisoners to feast upon, three of whom they had eaten up, and that he was the fourth, pointing to himself: that there having been a bloody battle between them and his great king, in the just defence of whom he was taken prisoner, with many others; all of these were carried off to different places to be devoured by their conquerors; and that it was his misfortune to be brought hither by thele wretches for the same purpose.

After I was made sensible of these things, I caused Friday to gather those horrid remains, and lay them together upon a heap, which I ordered to be set on fire, and burnt them to ashes: My man, however, still retained the nature of a cannibal, having a hankering stomach after some of the sless but such an extreme abhorrence did I express at the least appearance of it, that he durst not but conceal it; for I made him very sensible, that if he offered any such thing, I would certainly shoot him.

This being done, I carried my man with me to my castle, and gave him a pair of linen drawers, which I had taken out of the poor gunner's chest before mentioned; and which, with a little alteration, sitted him very well: in the next place I made him a jerkin of goat skin, such as my skill was able to manage, and indeed I thought myself then

made
Thus
proud
he we
heavy
fleeve
of his
they

a toler

took M that I myfe tweer the o door and a night to p me 1 muc for I pole of t flick with the the had at a as t fide

> nev var or wer and life

> > fic pre wo

s; fo

eased

they

d for

With

Fri.

bow

use

and

cks,

en-

With

day

urn

nes,

led

as

ad-

ılar

ver:

ten

nat

his

11-

to

be

le

i-

er

it

e

f

t.

1

a tolerable good tailor. I gave him also a cap which I made of a hare's skin, very convenient and fashionable. Thus being clothed tolerably well, my man was no less proud of his habit, than I was seeing him in it. Indeed he went very awkwardly at first, the drawers being too heavy ou his thighs, not used to bear any weight, and the sleeves of the waistcoat galled his shoulders and the inside of his arms; but by a little easing where he complained they hurt him, and by using himself to them, at length he took to them very well.

My next concern was, where I should lodge him; and that I might do well by him, and yet be perfectly easy myself, I erected a tent for him in the vacant place between my two fortifications, in the infide of the last, and the outfide of the first; and, as there was an entrance or door into my cave, I made a formal framed door-case, and a door to open on the infide; I barred it up in the night time, taking in my ladders too, fo that, was my man to prove treacherous, there could be no way to come at me in the infide of my innermost wall, without making so much noise in getting over, that it must needs waken me; for my first wall had now a complete roof over it of long poles, spreading over my tent, and leaning up to the fide of the mountain, which was again laid crofs with smaller flicks instead of laths, and thatched over a great thickness with the rice straw, which was as strong as reeds; and at the hole of the place, left on purpose to go in or out by the ladder, had placed a kind of a trap door, which, if it had been attempted on the outfide, would not have opened at all, but have fallen down, and made a great noise; and as to my weapons, every night I took them all to my bed fide.

But there was no occasion for this precaution; for surely never master had a more sincere, faithful, and loving servant, than Friday proved to me. Without passion, sullenness, or design, perfectly obliging and engaging, his affections were as much tied to me, as those of a child to its parents; and I might venture to say, he would have facrificed his life for the saving mine, upon any occasion whatsoever. And indeed the many testimonies he gave me of this, sufficiently convinced me that I had no occasion to use these precautions. And here I could not but resect with great wonder, that however it hath pleased the Aimighty in his providence, and in the government of the creation, to take

from fo great a part of the world of his creatures, the no. blest uses to which their faculties, and the powers of their fouls are adapted; yet that he has bestowed upon them the same reason, affections, sentiments of kindness and obliga. tion, passions of resentment, sincerity, sidelity, and all the capacities of doing and receiving good that he has given us; and that when he is graciously pleased to offer them occasions of exerting these, they are as ready, nay, more ready, to apply them to the proper uses for which they were bestowed, than we often are. These thoughts would make me melancholy, especially when I considered how mean a use we make of all these, even though we have these powers enlighted by the Holy Spirit of God, and by the knowledge of this world, as an addition to our understanding; and why it has pleased the heavenly Wisdom to conceal the like faving knowledge from fo many millions of fouls, who would certainly make a much better use of it than generally mankind do at this time. These reflections would sometimes lead me so far, as to invade the sovereignty of Providence, and, as it were, arraign the justice of such an arbitrary disposition of things, that should obscure that light from some, and reveal it to others, and yet expect a like duty from all. But I closed it up, checking my thoughts with this conclusion; first, That we were ignorant of that right and law by which these should be condemned; but as the Almighty was necessarily, and by the nature of his essence, infinitely just and holy; so it could not be otherwise, but that if these creatures were all destined to absence from himself, it was on account of sinning against that light, which, as the Scripture fays, was a law to themselves, and by such rules as their consciences would acknowledge to be just, though the first foundation was not discovered to us. And, Jecondly, That still as we were the clay in the hand of the potter, no vessel could thus say to him, "Why hast thou fashioned me after this " manner?"

I had not been above two or three days returned to my castle, but my chief design was, how I should bring Friday off from this horrid way of feeding; and to take from him that inhuman relish he by nature had been accustomed to, I thought it my duty to let him taste other slesh, which might the rather tempt him to the same abhorrence I so often expressed against their accursed way of living. Upon which, one morning I took him out with me, with

an interhome, goat I by her and bi piece, had at did not tremb thoughed the ped up my reon his did not rember the ped up my reon his did not rembe

on his did no ceive Inc tion, medi this r this c tears necet harm him, figns less o than while prefe upor derf poin mad acco he. ama mo put terl eith afte his

tha

ne-

their the

iga-

the

iven

hem

nore

they

ould

wor

ave

by

er-

n to

ons

fit

ec-

fo-

uf-

uld

ind

k-

ere

be

by

it

all

n-

as

ces

on

ve

ld

is

ly

1-

m

d

h

So

an intention to kill a kid out of the flock, and bring it home, and dress it. As I was going, I perceived a shegoat lying down in the shade, and two young kids sitting by her. Immediately I catched hold of my man Friday, and bidding him stand still, and not stir, I presented my piece, and shot one of the kids. My poor servant, who had at a distance perceived me kill his adversary, and yet did not know by what means, or how it was done, stood trembling and surprised, and looked so amazed, that I thought he would have sunk into the earth. He did not see the kid I aimed at, or behold I had killed it, but ripped up his waistcoat to see if he was not wounded, thinking my resolution was to kill him; for coming to me, he fell on his knees, earnestly pronouncing many things which I did not understand the meaning of; which at length I per-

ceived was, that I would not take away his life.

Indeed I was much concerned to see him in that condition, where nature is upon the severest trial, when the immediate hand of death is ready to put for ever a period to this mortal life: and indeed so much compassion had I to this creature, that it was with difficulty I refrained from But, however, as another fort of countenance was necessary, and to convince him that I would do him no harm, I took him, fmiling, by the hand, then laughed at him, and pointing to the kid which I had flain, made figns to him to fetch it, which accordingly he did. less curious was he in viewing how the creature was killed, than he had been before in beholding the Indian; which, while he was admiring at, I charged my gun again, and presently perceived a great fowl like a hawk, perching upon a tree within shot; and, therefore, to let, Friday understand what I was going to do, I called him to me again, pointing at the fowl, which I found to be a parrot. made him understand that I would shoot and kill that bird; accordingly I fired, and bade him look, when immediately he faw the parrot fall down. Again he stood like one amazed, notwithstanding all I had faid to him: and the more confounded he was, because he did not perceive me put any thing into my gun. Undoubtedly a thing fo utterly strange, carrying death along with it, far or near, either to man or beast, must certainly create the greater aftonishment to one who never had heard such a thing in his whole life: and really his amazement continued fo long, that had I allowed it, he would have prostrated himself before me and my gun, with the greatest worship and adoration. As for the gun in particular, he would not so much as touch it for several days after; but would come and communicate his thoughts to it, and talk to it, as if the senseless piece had understood and answered him; all this I could perceive him do, when he thought my back was turned, the chief intent of which was, to desire it not to kill him, as I afterwards came to understand.

I never strove to prevent his admiration, nor hinder him from those comical gestures he used on such occasions; but when his aftonishment was a little over, I made tokens to him to run and fetch the parrot that I had shot; which accordingly he did, staying some time longer than usual, by reason the bird, not being quite dead, had fluttered some way farther from the place where she fell. In the mean time, as he was looking for her, I took the advantage of charging my gun again, that fo I might be ready for any other mark that offered; but nothing more occurred at that time. So I brought home the kid, and the same evening took off the skin, and divided the carcase as well as I could. Part of the flesh I stewed and boiled in a pot I had for this purpose. And then spreading my table, I fat down, giving my man some of it to eat, who was wonderfully pleased, and seemed to like it very well: but what was the most surprising to him was to see me eat falt with it: upon which he made me understand, that the salt was very bad for me; when putting a little into his mouth, he feemed to nauseate it in such a manner, as to spit and sputter at it, and then washed his mouth with fresh water: but to shew him how contrary his opinion was to mine, I put some meat into my mouth without falt, and feigned to fpit and sputter as much for the want of it, as he had done at it; yet all this proved of no fignification to Friday; and it was a long while before he could endure falt in his meat or broth, and even then but a fmall quantity.

Thus having fed him sufficiently with boiled meat and broth at that time, the next day I was resolved to feast him with a roasted piece of the kid. And having no spit to fasten it, nor jack to turn it, I made use of that common artistice which many of the common people of England have, that is, to set two poles upon each side of the sire, and one cross on the top, hanging the meat thereon with a string, and so turning round continually, roast it, in the same manner as we read bloody tyrants of old cruelly

roaff mira that cam expr way you whe

1

fo nother fellothing that him der it many free growthan large I har Fri har

wa wh

hin

me

he

thi I that has made

for him ap

dora.

much

e and

if the

Il this

z was

ot to

r him

; but

ns to

h ac-

, by

iome

mean

ge of

d at

ame

well

pot

e, I

von-

vhat

with

was

he

out-

er:

e, I

d to

one

and

eat

and

pit

m-

ind

re,

ith

he

lly

miration in my man Friday, being quite another way than that to which the favages were accustomed. But when he came to taste the sweetness and tenderness of the sless, he expressed his entire satisfaction above a thousand different ways. And as I could not but understand his meaning, you may be sure I was as wonderfully pleased, especially when he made it also very plain to me, that he would never, while he lived, eat man's sless more.

It was now high time I should set my servant to work; so next day I set him to beat out some corn, and sist it in the same manner as I had done before. And really the sellow was very quick and handy in the execution of any thing I ordered him to go about. I made him understand that it was to make bread for us to eat, and afterwards let him see me bake it. In short, he did every thing as I ordered him, and in a little time as well as I could perform

But now confidering that I had two mouths to feed inflead of one, it was necessary that I must provide more ground for my harvest, and plant a larger quantity of corn than I commonly used to do; upon which I marked out a larger piece of land, fencing it in, in the same manner as I had done before; in the execution of which I must give Friday this good word that no man could work more hardy, or with better will than he did: and when I made him sensible that it was for bread to serve him as well as me, he then very passionately made me understand, that he thought I had much more labour on his account, than I had for myself; and that no pains or diligence should be wanting in him, if I would but direct him in those works wherein he might proceed.

I must certainly own, that this was the most pleasant year I ever had in the island; for after some time, Friday began to talk pretty well, and understood the names of those things which I was wont to call for, and the places where I used to send him. So that my long silent tongue, which had been useless so many years, except in an exclamatory manner, either for deliverance or blessings, now began to be occupied in teaching, and talking to my man Friday; for indeed I had such a singular satisfaction in the fellow himself, so innocent did his simple and unseigned honesty appear more and more to me every day, that I really began entirely to love him; and for his part, I believe there

E

iA

hi

W

he

on

a

E

to

to

af

to

W

th

th

te

21

0

tl

tl

1

d

t

41

n

0

-

t

f

1

was no love lost, and that his nature had been more charmed by his exceeding kindness, and his affections more placed upon me, than any other object whatsoever among his own countrymen. I once had a great mind to try if he had any hankering inclination to his own country again: and by this time having learned him English so well, that he could give me tolerable answers to any question which I demanded. I asked him whether that nation to which he belonged, ever conquered in battle? This question made Friday to smile, and to which he answered, "Yes, yes, we always fight the better;" as much as to say, they always got the better in fight. Upon which we proceeded on the following discourse: You say, said I, that you always fight the better; why then, Friday, how came you to be taken prisoner?

Friday. But for all that my nation beat much.

Master. How, say you, beat! if your nation beat them,

how came you to be taken?

Friday. They more many mans than my nation in the place where me was; they take one, two three, and me: my nation much over beat them in the yonder place where me no was, there my nation mans beat one, two, three great tousand.

Master. Then why did not your men recover you from

the hands of your enemies?

Friday. They run one, two, or three, and me; they make all go in the canoe; my nation have no canoe that time.

Master. 'Tis very well, Friday; but what does your nation do with the prisoners they take? Do they carry them away and eat them as these have done?

Friday. Yes, yes, my nation eat mans too, eat up all.

Master. To what place do they carry them to be dewoured?

Friday. Go to other nations where they think.

Master. Do they bring them hither?

Friday. Yes, come over hither, come over other place.

Master. And have you been with them here, Friday?

Friday. Yes, me been here, (pointing to the north-west of the island, being the side where they used to land.)

Thus having gotten what account I could from my man, I plainly understood, that he had been as bad as any of the rest of the cannibals, having been formerly among the sawages who used to come on shore on the farthest part of the

island, upon the same bloody occasion as he was brought hither for: and some time after I carried him to that place where he pointed; and no sooner did he come there, but he presently knew the ground, signifying to me that he was once there when they ate up twenty men, two women, and a young child; but as he could not explain the number in English, he did it by so many stones in a row, making a sign

to me to count them.

This passage I have the rather mentioned, because it led to things more important and ufeful for me to know: for after I had this fatisfactory discourse with him, my next question was, how far it was from the island to the shore. and whether the canoes were not often loft in the ocean? to which he answered, there was no danger; that no canoes were ever lost; but that after a little way out to the sea, there was a strong current, and a wind always one way in the afternoon. This I thought at first to be no more than the fets of the tide, of going out or coming in; but I afterwards understood it was occasioned by the great draught and reflux of the mighty river Oroonoko, in the mouth or gulph of which I imagined my kingdom lay; and that the land which I perceived to the W. and N. W. must be the great island Trinidad, on the north of the river. thousand questions (if that would satisfy me) did I ask Friday, about the nature of the country, the sea, the coasts, the inhabitants, and what nations were nearest them; to which questions the poor fellow declared all he knew, with the greatest openness, and utmost fincerity. When I demanded of him the particular names of the various nations of his fort of people, he could only answer me in general, that they were called Carabee. Hence it was I considered that these must be the Caribbees, so much taken notice of by our maps, to be on that part of America, which reaches from the mouth of the river Oroonoko to Guiania, and fo Then Friday proceeded to tell me, that on to St. Martha. up a great way beyond the moon, as much as to fay, beyond the fetting of the moon, which must be W. from their country, there dwelt white bearded men, fuch as I was, pointing to my whifkers, and that they kill much mans. was not ignorant with what barbarity the Spaniards treated these creatures; so that I presently concluded it must be them, whose cruelties had spread throughout America, to be remembered even to succeeding generations.

L 2

armaced
own
had
and
t he

h he nade

we.

ight

em,

ne: here

hey

nanem

l. de-

ce.

an,

fa-

lar

CO

ad

ap

iu

Be

ma

un

W

gr

ed

WI

it

ce

of

the

th

be

kn

re

ha

cl

ho

k

th

er

th

Well, you may be fure, this knowledge, which the imperfect information of my man had led me to, was very comfortable to me, and made me so curious as to ask him, how I might depart from this island, and get amongst those white men? He told me, "Yes, yes, I might go in two canoes." In two canoes, thought I, what does my man mean? surely he means one for himself, and another for me: and if not, how must two canoes hold me without being joined, or one part of my body being put in one, and another in the other? And indeed it was a long time before I understood his meaning, which was, that it must be a large boat, as big as two canoes, able to bear with the waves, and not so liable to be overwhelmed as one must be.

I believe there is no state of life but what may be happy, if people would but endeavour for their part to make it so. He is not the happiest man that has the most riches; but he that is content with what he hath. Before I had my servant, I thought myself miserable till I had him; and now that I had enjoyed the happy benefits of him, I still complained, and begged a deliverance from a place of retirement, ease, and plenty, where Providence had sufficiently blessed me. In a word, from this time I entertained some hopes, that one time or other I might find an opportunity to make my escape from this island, and that this

poor savage might be a great furtherance thereto.

All the time fince my man became fo intelligent as to understand and speak to me, I spared no pains nor diligence to instruct him, according to my poor share of knowledge in the principles of religion, and the adoration that he ought to pay to the True God. One time, as I very well remember, I asked him who made him? At first the innocent creature did not understand what I meant, but rather thought I asked him who was his father? upon which I took another way to make him fenfible, by demanding from him an answer to this question. Friday, said I, who is it that made the fea, this ground whereon we walk, and all these hills and woods which we behold? And here, indeed, I did not miss my intention: for he told me it was Old Benamuckee (the God whom I supposed these savages adored) who lived a great way beyond all. But as to his attributes, poor Friday was an utter stranger. He could describe nothing of this great person; and all that he could day was, that he was very old, much older than the fea and

land, the moon, or the stars. Friday, said I again, if this great and old person has made all things in the world, how comes it to pass, that all things, as you in particular, do not adore and worship him? upon this looking very grave, with a persect sweet look of innocence, he replied, "Master, all things say O to him," by which it may reasonably be supposed he meant adoration. And where, said I, do the people of your country go when they die? He answered to Benamuckee. What, and those people that are eaten up, do they go there? "Benamuckee," said he, "love 'em dearly; "me pray to Benamuckee in de canoe, and Benamuckee

" would love me when dey eat me all up."

im-

rery

im,

ole

two

nan

for

out

ne,

me

uit

he

uft

y,

fo.

ut

ny

nd

ill

e-

i-

d

.

13

0

t

y

e

Such discourses as these had I with my man, and such made me sensible, that the true God is worshipped, the under impersect similitudes; and that the salse adoration which the Heathens give to their imaginary Deity, is as great an argument of the divine effence, as the most learned Athiests (falsely so called) can bring against it: for God will be gloristed in his works, let the denomination be what it will; and I cannot be of that opinion which some conceive, that God should decree men to be damned for want of a right notion of faith, in a place where the wisdom of the Almighty has not permitted it to be preached: and therefore cannot but conclude, that since obedience is the best sacrifice, these poor creatures, acting by that light and knowledge which they are possessed of, may undoubtedly Chrin, a happy salvation, though not that enjoyment with

But laying there contessors, and martyrs, must enjoy. vines than me to discuss, I began to instruct are fit for dithe faving knowledge of the true Deity, in which the directions of God's Holy Spirit affished me. I lifted up my hands to Heaven, and pointing thereto, told him, that the great Maker of Heaven and Earth lived there: that as his infinite power fashioned this world out of a confused chaos, and made it in that beautiful frame which we behold, fo he governs and preserves it by his unbounded knowledge, fovereign greatness, and peculiar providence: that he was omnipotent, could do every thing for us, give every thing to us, and take every thing away from us: that he was a rewarder and punisher of good and evil actions: that there was nothing but what he knew, no thoughts fo fecret but what he could bring to light; and thus, by degrees, I opened his eyes, and described to him

E 3

the manner of the creation of the world, the situation of paradife, the transgression of our first parents, the wickedness of God's peculiar people, and the universal sins and abominations of the whole earth. When these things were implanted in his mind, I told him, that as God's justice was equal to his mercy, he resolved to destroy this world. till his fon Jesus Christ interposed in our behalf; and; to procure our redemption, obtained leave of his heavenly father to come down from Heaven into the world, where he took human nature upon him, instructed us in our way to eternal life, and died as a facrifice for our fins; that he was now ascended into Heaven, mediating for our pardon, delivering our petitions, and obtaining all those good benefits which we ask in his name, by humble and hearty prayers, all which were heard at the throne of Heaven. As very frequently I used to inculcate things into his mind, Friday one day told me, that if our great God could hear us beyond the fun, he must surely be a greater God than their Benamuckee, who lived but a little way off, and yet could not hear them till they ascended the great mountains where he dwelt, to speak to him. What, said I, Friday, did you go thither to speak to him too? He answered, " No, they never went that were young men, none but old men, called their Oowakakee," meaning the Indian priests, " who went to say O, (so he called saying their prayers) "and they returned back, and told them what " Benamuckee faid." From hence, I could regod's imferve how happy we Chrifter an guide; and that our faith medicher missed, nor our reason imposed upon, by any set of men, such as these Indian impostors.

But, to clear up this palpable cheat to my man Friday, I told him, that the pretence of their ancient men going up to the mountain to fay O to their God Benamuckee, was an impossure, and that their bringing back an answer was all a sham, if not worse; for that, if there was any such thing spoken to them, surely it must proceed from an infernal spirit. And here I thought it necessary to enter into a long discourse with him, which I did after this manner.

Friday, faid I, you must know, that before this world was made, there was an Almighty power existing, by whose power all things were made, and whose Majesty shall have no end. To be gloristed and adored by beings of a heavenly nature, he created angels and archangels, that is

glori etern and ' Luci liar i that ingra ador thro pret and folly afpi of f miff hoft quie prii fall

> atte gel An fur He

15 C

fai to ha in pr to fe

fr ec re w

fh h

glorified spirits resembling himself, to encompass his throne, eternally finging forth his praise in the most heavenly founds and divine harmony. And, among this heavenly choir, Lucifer bore a great fway, as being then one of the peculiar favourites of these celestial abodes; but he, contrary to that duty he owed his heavenly Sovereign, with unbounded ingratitude to his Divine Creator, not only envied him that adoration which was his due, but thought to usurp that throne, which he had neither power to keep, nor title to pretend to: He raised a diffention and civil war in Heaven, Unbounded and had a number of angels to take his part. folly! stupendous pride! thus to hope for victory, and aspire above his powerful Creator! The Deity, not fearful of such an enemy, yet justly provoked at this rebellion, commissioned his archangel Michael to lead forth the heavenly hoft, and give him battle; the advantage of which was quickly perceived, by Satan's being overthrown, and the prince of the air, (for so the devil was called, with all his fallen angels, driven headlong into a dismal place, which is called Hell.

The recital of this truth made my man give the greatest attention, and he expressed a great satisfaction by his gestures, that God had sent the devil into the deep hole. And then I desired him to give great heed to what I had

further to fay.

n of

ced.

and

vere

tice.

rld,

to

nly

ere

vay

he

on,

be-

rty

en.

d,

ar

an

et

ns:

y,
d,

ut

ir

at.

.

h

t

No fooner, proceeded I, was God freed from, and the Heavens clear of this arch-traitor, but the father speaks to the Son and Holy Spirit, who belonged to his essence, and were equal to him in power and glory, Come let us make man, said he, in our own image, after our own likeness, Gen. i. 26. to have dominion over the creatures of the world which we have created. And these he intended should glorify him in Heaven, according to their obedience in this state of probation on earth, which was, as it were, to be the school to train them up for these heavenly mansions. Now, Satan feeing himself foiled; yet that God had not taken the power from him as prince of the air, which power Heaven defigned he should retain, whereby his creatures might be tried; in revenge for the difgrace he had received, he tempts Adam's wife, Eve, to taste of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, which God had forbidden. He appears to her in the shape of a serpent, then a most beautiful creature, and tells her, that it was no better than an imposition, which God had put upon her and her husband, not to eat of that fair

wh

wh

de

his

de

and

fai

he

re

te

V

11

n

fruit which he had created; that the taste thereof would make them immortal like God himself; and consequently as great and powerful as he. Upon which she not only eat thereof herself, but made her husband eat also, which brought them both under the heavenly displeasure.

Here Friday expressed a great concern: "Ah, poor mans!" cried he, "naughty womans! naughty devil! make God not love de mans, make mans like devil

" himself."

Friday, said I, God still loved mankind, and though the deval tempted human nature fo far, he would not fuffer him to have an absolute power over them. I have told you before of his tender love to his people, till they, like Lucifer, disobeyed his commands and rebelled against him; and even then, how Jesus Christ, his only Son, come to fave inners. But still every man that lives in the world is under temptation and trial. The devil has yet a power, as prince of the air, to suggest evil cogitations in our minds, and prompt us on to wicked actions, that he might glory. in our destruction. Whatever evil thoughts we have, proceed from him; fo that God, in this our diffress, expects we should apply ourselves to him by fervent prayer for speedy redress. He is not like Benamuchee, to let none come near him but Oowakakee, but suffers the people as well as priests to offer themselves at his feet, thereby to be delivered from the power and temptation of the devil.

But though at first my man Friday expressed some concern at the wickedness of Lucifer, I found it not so easy to imprint the right notions of him in his mind, as it was about the divine essence of God: for there nature assisted me in all my arguments, to shew to him plainly the necessity of a great first cause, and over ruling, governing power, of a secret directing Providence, and of the equity and reasonableness of paying adoration to our Creator; whereas there appeared nothing of all this in the notion of an evil spirit, of his sirst beginning, his nature, and, above all, of his inclination to evil actions, and his power to tempt us to the like. And indeed this unlearned Indian, by the mere force of nature, puzzled me with one particular question, more

than ever I could have expected.

I had, it seems, one day, been talking to him of the omnipoter t power of God, and his infinite abhorrence of sin, insomuch that the Scriptures styled him a consuming fire to all the workers of iniquity; and that it was in his power,

ently y eat hich

poorvil! levil

the him befer, and ave unas ds,

for ne as

0-

to at: n a a

7-

e

whenever he pleased, to destroy all the world in a moment, the greater part of which are continually offending him.

When, with a serious attention, he had listened a great while to what I said, after I had been telling him how the devil was God's enemy in the hearts of men, and used all his malice and skill to defeat the good designs of Providence, and destroy the kingdom of Christ in the world, and so forth: "Very well, master," said Friday, "you say "God is so strong, so great, is he not much strong, much mightier than the naughty devil?" To be sure, Friday, said I, God is more wise and stronger than the serpent: he is above the devil, which makes us pray to him, that he would tread down Satan under his seet, enable us to resist the violent temptations, and quench his siery darts. "Why then," answered Friday quickly, "if God, as you say, has much strong, much might as the devil, why God no kill devil, make no more tempt, no more do wicked."

You may be certain, I was strangely surprised at this question of my man's; and, though an old man, I was but a young doctor, and consequently very ill qualified for a casuist, or a resolver of intricate doubts in religion, and, as it required some time for me to study for an answer, I pretended not to hear him, nor to ask him what he said : but, fo earnest was he for an answer, as not to forget his question, which he repeated in the very same broken words as above. When I had recovered myself a little, Friday, said I, God will at last punish him severely, being reserved for judgment, and is to be cast into the bottomless pit, to remain in fire everlasling. But all this did not fatisfy Friday; for, returning upon me, he repeated my words, "RESERVE " AT LAST, me no understand; but, why not kill devil " now, not kill devil, great, great while ago?" Friday, faid I, you may as well ask me why God does not kill you and me, when, by our wicked actions, we so much offend his divine Majesty? He gives us time to repent of our sins, that thereby we may obtain pardon. At these words obtain pardon, Friday mused a great while; and, at last, looking me fledfattly in the face, "Well, well," faid he, "that's " very well; fo you, I, devil, all wicked mans, all preserve, " repent, God pardon all."

Indeed, here I was run down to the last extremity, when it became very evident to me, how mere natural notions will guide reasonable creatures to the knowledge of a Deity, and to the homage due to the Supreme Being of

E 5

of

br

fer

ar

as

no

I

m

God; but, however, nothing but divine revelation can form the knowledge of Jesus Christ, and of a redemption purchased for us, of the mediator of the new covenant, and of an intercessor at the sootstool of God's throne: and, therefore, the Gospel of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ; that is, the word and Spirit of God, promised for the guide and sanctifier of his people, are the most necessary instructors of the souls of men, in the saving knowledge of the Almighty, and the means to attain eternal happiness.

And now I found it necessary to put an end to this difcourse between my man and me; for which purpose I rose up hastily, and made as if I had some occasion to go out, fending Friday for something that was a good way off. then fell on my knees, and beseeched God that he would inspire me so far as to guide this poor savage in the knowledge of Christ, to answer his questions more clearly, that his conscience might be convinced, his eyes opened, and When he returned again, I entered into his foul faved. a very long discourse with him, upon the subject of the world's redemption by the Saviour of it, and the doctrine of repentance preached from Heaven, together with an holy faith of our bleffed Redeemer Jesus Christ: and then I proceeded to explain to him, according to my weak capacity, the reason why our Saviour took not on him the nature of angels, but rather the feed of Abraham; and how the fallen angels had no benefit by that redemption; and, lastly, that he came only to the lost sheep of the house of Ifrael, and the like. God knows I had more fincerity than knowledge in all the ways I took for the poor Indian's instruction: and, I must acknowledge what I believe, every body that acts upon the same principle will find, that in laying heavenly truths open before him, I informed and instructed myself in many things that either I did not know, or had not perfectly confidered before; so that, however, this poor creature might be improved by my instructions, certain it is, that I myself had great reason to be thankful to Providence for fending him to me. His company allayed my grief, and made my habitation comfortable; and when I reflected that the solitary life to which I had been fo long confined, had made me to look further towards Heaven, by making me the instrument under Providence, to fave the life, and, for ought I know, the foul of this poor favage, by bringing him to the knowledge of Jesus Christ, it caused a secret joy to spread through every part

of my foul; and I frequently rejoiced, that ever I was brought to this place, which I once thought the most mi-

serable part of the world.

rm ur-

of

reft;

de

che

if- ...

le

It,

I

ld

V-

at

d

0

e

le

n n

e

In this thankful frame of mind did I afterwards continue, while I abode on the island, and for three years did my man and I live in the greatest enjoyment of happiness. Indeed, I believe, the savage was as good a Christian as I; and I hope we were equally penitent; and such penitents as were comforted and restored by God's Holy Spirit; for now we had the word of the Lord to instruct us in the right way, as much as if we had been on the English shore.

By the constant application I made of the Scriptures, as I read them to my man Friday, I earnestly endeavoured to make him understand every part of it, as much as lay in my power. He also, on the other hand, by his very serious questions and inquiries, made me a much better proficient in Scripture knowledge, than I should have been by my own private reading and fludy. I must not omit another thing, proceeding from the experience I had in my retirement: It was that infinite and inexpressible blessing, the knowledge of God through Jesus Christ, which was so plain and easy to be understood, as immediately to direct me to carry on the great-work of fincere repentance for my fins, and laying hold of a Saviour for eternal life, to a practical stated reformation, and obedience to all God's out the affillance of a reverend and orthodox divine; and especially by this same instruction, so to enlighten this favage creature, as to make him fo good a Christian, as very few could exceed him. And there was only this great thing wanting, that I had no authority to administer the Holy Sacrament, that heavenly participation of Christ's body and blood; yet, however, we rested ourselves content, that God would accept our desires, and according to our faith, have mercy on us.

But what we wanted one way, was made up in another, and that was universal peace in our little church. We had no disputes and wranglings about the nature and equality of the holy, blessed, and undivided Trinity; no niceties in doctrine, or schemes of church government; no sour or morose dissenters to impose more sublimated notions upon us; no pedant sophisters to consound us with unintelligible mysteries: but, instead of all this, we enjoyed the most certain guide to Heaven; that is, the word of God: be-

fides which, we had the comfortable views of his spirit leading us to the truth, and making us both willing and obedient to the instruction of his word. As the knowledge and practice of this are the principal means of salvation, I cannot see what it avails any Christian church, or man in the world, to amuse himself with speculations and opinions, except it be to display their particular vanity and affectation.

You may well suppose, that, by the frequent discourse we had together, my man and I became most intimately acquainted, and that there was but very little that I could fay, but what Friday understood; and, indeed, he spoke very fluently, though it was but broken English. I now took a particular pleasure in relating all my adventures, especially those that occurred fince my being cast on this island. I made him understand that wonderful mystery, as he conceived, of gunpowder and bullet, and taught him how to shoot. I also presented to him a knife, which pleased him exceedingly, making him a belt, with a frog hanging thereto, like those in which we wear hangers in England; and, instead of a hanger to put in the frog, I gave him a hatchet, which was not only as good, but even a better weapon upon may occasions. In a word, my man thus accoutred, looked upon himself as great as Don Quixote, when that celebrated champion went to combat the windmill.

I next gave him a very particular description of the territories of Europe, and in a particular manner of Old England, the place of my nativity. I laid before him the manner of our worshipping God, our behaviour one to another, and how we trade in ships to every part of the universe. I then told him my misfortunes in being shipwrecked; shewing him, as near as I could, the place where the ship lay, which had been gone long before; but I brought him to the ruins of my boat, which before my whole strength could not move, but now was almost rotten, and fallen to pieces. I observed my man Friday to view this boat with an uncommon curiofity; which, when he had done, he stood pondering a great while, and said nothing. At last, said I, Friday, what makes you ponder fo much? He replied, "O master, me see like boat come " to place at my nation."

It was some time, indeed, before I understood what my man meant; but examining strictly into it, I plainly found,

of wrope creatheir cond

that

and upo who faid ma gen bed rep

COL

ha

kii ed

fu

ba m H ar

fi F b

T

irit

and

lge

on,

nan

pi-

nd

rfe

ld

ke

W

s,

15

у,

d

g

3

a

r

that fuch another boat, resembling mine, had come upon the country where he dwelt; that is to say, by his farther explanation, that the boat was driven there through stress of weather. It then came into my mind, that some European ship having been cast away, the poor distressed creatures were forced to have recourse to the boat to save their lives; and being all, as I thought, drowned, I never concerned myself to ask any thing concerning them, but my only inquiry was about the boat, and what description my man could give of it.

Indeed Friday answered my demands very well, making every thing very plain to my understanding; but beyond measure was I satisfied, when he told me with great warmth and ardour, "O master, we save white mans from drown;" upon which I immediately asked him, if there were any white mans, as he called them, in the boat? "Yes, yes," faid he, "the boat full, very full of white mans." How many, Friday? faid I. Hereupon he numbered his fingers, and counted seventeen. And when I asked him what became of them all, and whether they lived or not? he replied, "Yes, master, they all live, they be live among "my nation." This information put fresh thoughts into my head, that these must be those very men who before I concluded had been swallowed up in the ocean, after they had left their ship, that had struck upon the rocks of my kingdom, and after escaping the fury of the deep, landed upon the wild shore, and committed themselves to the fury of the devouring Indians.

The manner of their cruelties to one another, which confequently, as I thought, must be acted with greater barbarity to strangers, created in me a great anxiety, and made me still more curious to ask Friday concerning them. He told me he was fure they still lived there, having resided among them above four years, and that the favages gave them victuals to live upon: But pray, Friday, faid I, whence proceeded all this good nature and generofity? How came it to pass that they did not kill and eat them, to please their devouring appetites; and occasion so splendid an entertainment among them? "No, no," faid Friday, "they not kill 'em, they make brother with 'em;" by which I understood there was a truce between them. And then I had a more favourable opinion of the Indians, upon Friday uttering these words: " My nation t'other " nation no eat mans, but when mans make war fight:"

as though he had faid, that neither those of his kingdom, nor any other nations that he knew of, ever ate their fellow-creatures, but such as their law of arms allowed to be devoured; that is, those miserable captives, whose missor-

tune it should be to be made prisoners of war.

Some confiderable time after, upon a very pleasant day, in most serene weather, my man and I stood upon the topof a hill, on the east fide of the island, whence I had once before beheld the continent of America. I could not tell. immediately what was the matter; for fuddenly Friday. fell a jumping and dancing as if he had been mad; and upon my demanding the reason of his behaviour, "O joy!" faid he, "O glad! there fee my country, there my nation, " there live white mans gether." And indeed fuch a rapturous fense of pleasure appeared in his countenance, that his eyes had an uncommon sparkling and brightness, and. fuch a strange eagerness, as if he had a longing desire to be in his own country again. This made me not fo well. fatisfied with my man Friday as before; for by this appearance, I made no dispute, but that if he could get back. thither again, he would not only be unmindful of what religion I had taught him, but likewise of the great obligation he owed me for his wonderful deliverance: nay, that he would not only inform his countrymen of me, but accompany hundreds of them to my kingdom, and make me a miserable sacrifice like those unhappy wretches taken in battle.

Indeed I was very much to blame to have these cruels and unjust suspicions, and must freely own I wronged the poor creature very much, who was of a quite contrary temper. And had he had that discerning acuteness which many Europeans have, he would certainly have perceived my coldness and indifference, and also have been very much concerned upon that account: as I was now more circumspect, I had much lessened my kindness and familiarity with him, and while this jealousy continued, I used that artful way (now too much in fashion, the occasion of strife and dissention) of pumping him daily, thereby to discover whether he was deceitful in his thoughts and inclinations; but certainly he had nothing in him but what was confishent with the best principles, both as a religious Christian and a grateful friend; and, indeed, I found every thing he said was so ingenuous and innocent, that I had no room for suspicion, and, in spite of all uneasiness, he not

only r much him.

As

the w the c in yo and a " be Frid be a he, " te " to But will ftru on a ec V that 66 t " Fri " 1 YOU the 66

W

re

th

he

in

to

30

a

fel-

o be

for-

day,

top-

once

tell.

day.

and y!"

ion,

ap-

and.

rell.

ap.

nat.

li-

y s

ut.

ke:

ena

ela

ne

·y

d

e

d

only made me entirely his own again, but also caused me much to lament that I ever conceived one ill thought of him.

As we were walking up the fame hill another day, when the weather was so hazy at sea, that I could not perceive the continent, Friday, faid I, don't you wish yourself to be in your own country, your nation, among your old friends and acquaintances? "Yes," faid he, "me much O glad to "be at my own nation." And what would you do there Friday? Would you turn wild again, eat man's flesh, and be a favage as you were formerly? "No, no," (answered he, full of concern, and shaking his head) " Friday now "tell them to live good, tell them pray God, tell them " to eat corn bread, cattle, flesh, milk, no eat man again." But surely, replied I, if you should offer to do all this, they will kill you; and to manifest their contempt of such instruction, eat you up when they have done. He then put on a grave, yet innocent and smooth countenance, saying, "No, they no kill me, they willing love learn:" that is, that they would be very willing to learn: adding withal, " that they had learned much of the bearded mans that " came in the boat." Will you, faid I, go back again, Friday? He smiled at that, and told me, "that he could "not swim so far," But, said I, I will make a canoe for you: "Yes, master," faid he, " me go if you go, me no "go if you stay." I go, Friday! why, would you have, them to eat me up, and devour your kind master? "No, "no," faid he, " me make them not eat master, and me " make them much love you;" that is, he would tell them how I had flain his enemies, and thereby faved his life, for which reason he would make them love me: and then he related to me, as well as he was able, how exceedingly kind those of his nation were to the white, or bearded men, as he called them, who, in their great calamity, were driven into their country.

It was from this time, indeed, I had strong inclinations to venture over, and use my utmost efforts, if possible, to join these white bearded men, who undoubtedly were Spaniards or Portuguese; for, thought I, it must be certainly a better and safer way to escape when there is a good company, than for me alone, from an island forty miles off the shore, and without any assistance. Some days after, Friday and I being at work, as usual, at the same time diverting ourselves with various discourses, I told him I had

ce Y

or bu

er no

thou

faid

" (

er t

Ala

prie

you

nor

Yo

to :

tud wa

lv

wa fai

ca he

fh

of

W

fe

de

th

a boat which I would bestow upon him, whenever he pleased to return to his own nation: and to convince him of the truth of what I said, I took him with me to the other side of the island, where my frigate lay, and then taking it from under the water, (for I always kept it sunk for fear of a discovery) we both went into it to see how it would manage

fuch an expedition.

And really never could any be more dexterous in rowing than my faithful fervant, making the boat go as fast again as I could. Well now, Friday, faid I, shall we now go to your fo much defired nation? But instead of meeting with that cheerfulness I expected, he looked very dull and melancholy at my faying fo; which indeed at first surprifed me, till he made me sensible, that his concern was about the boat's being too small to go so far a voyage. Upon which I let him understand I had a much bigger; and, accordingly, the next day went to the place where the first boat lay, which I had made, when all the strength I had or art I could use failed me in my attempt to get it into the water : but now it having lain in the fun two and twenty years, and no care being taken of it all that while, it became in a manner rotten. My man told me, that fuch a boat would do very well for the purpose, sufficient to carry enough wittle, drink, bread, for that was his manner of talking. In short, my mind being strongly fixed upon my defign of going over with him to the Continent, I very plainly told him, that we would both go and make a boat full as big, and more proportionable than that, wherein he might fafely return to his own nation.

These words made Friday look so very pensive, that I thought he would have fallen at my feet. It was some time before he could speak a word, which made me ask him, what was the matter with him? He replied in a very soft and moving tone, "What has poor Friday done? why are "you angry mad with poor servant? What me done, O "what me done?" Friday, said I, you never yet have offended me: what makes you think I am angry with you, when I am not angry at all, "You no angry, no "angry," said he several times; "if you be no angry, why den send Friday over great water to my own nation?" Why surely, Friday, answered I, did not you wish to be there, when from a mountain you beheld the place where you was born? and is it not to satisfy your defires that I am willing to give you leave to return thither?

leafed truth of the

iere igth get and ile,

ner ery pat he

I ne n, ft re 0

h 0 ,

n una dif. inage Wing gain ting and furwas age. er;

hat ent

on

e

"Yes, yes," faid Friday, " me wish be there sure enough, but me den wish master there too : no wish Friday there, " no master there." In short, he could not endure the thoughts of going there without me. I go there, Friday, faid I, what shall I do there? He answered very quickly, " O mafter, you do great deal much good, you teach all " de wild mans to be good tame mans : you learn dem to " be fober, live good life, to know God, and pray God." Alas! poor Friday, faid I, what can I do against their priests of Benamuckee, or indeed what good can I make your nation fensible of, when I myself am but a poor ignorant man? "No, no, master," said he, " you be no ig-"norant, you teachee me good, you teachee dem good." You shall go without me, Friday, said I, for I don't care to accompany you thither; I would rather live in this folitude than venture among such inhuman savages. Go your way, fince you defire it, and leave me alone by myfelf, as I was before I faved your life.

Never was any creature more thunderstruck than Friday was at these words. "Go me away, leave master away," faid he, after a long filence, " no, no, Friday die, Friday "live not master gone;" as though he had said, I neither can nor will live, if my master sends me from him. And here I cannot but take notice of the strong ties of friendthip, which many times furpais those of confanguinity: For often we and a great dilagrooment among kindred : and when there is any feeming regard for each other, it is very seldom true, and scarce ever lasting, if powerful interest does not bear the fway; and that alone is often the occation of the greatest hatred in the world, which is to defire the death of parents and relations, for the fake of acquiring their fortunes. But there was no fuch thing between my servant and me: instead of which there was the greatest gratitude, and the most fincere love; he found me not only his deliverer, but his preserver and comforter; not a severe and cruel tyrant, but a kind, loving, and affable friend. He wanted for no manner of sustenance; and, when he was ill, or out of order, I was his physician, not only for his body, but his foul; and therefore no wonder was it, that such an innocent creature, long fince divested of his former natural cruelty, should have an uncommon concern at so cruel a separation from me, which pierced him to the very foul, and made him defire even to die, rather than live without me.

After I had told Friday, in a very careless manner, that he should be at his liberty as soon as the boat was made, the language of his eyes expressed all imaginable confusion; when, immediately running to one of his hatchets, which he used to wear as a defensive weapon, he gives it into my hand, with a heart fo full, that he could scarcely speak. Friday, said I, what is it you mean? What must I do with this? "Only kill Friday," faid he, "Friday care not live" " long." But what must I kill you for? replied I again; "Ah! dear master, what made you Friday save from ear " a me up, fo keep long Friday, make Friday love God, " and love not Benamuckee, and now Friday fend away, " never see Friday more." As though the poor creature had faid, Alas! my dearest kind master! how comes it to país, that, after having ventured your precious life to fave' me from the jaws of devouring cannibals, like myself, after fuch a tender regard to provide for me such comfortable nourishment, and continuing so long a kind master, and amost fincere friend; and after making me forfake the falle notion of an Indian Deity, and worship the true God in spirit and in truth; after all this, how comes it now, that you are willing to fend me away to my former course of living, by which means undoubtedly we shall be dead to each other; but greater must be my misfortune, that I shall never behold my best friend I have in the world any more And this undoubtedly, though he could not express him. felf so clearly, must be his fentiments; for the tears ran down his cheeks in such a plentiful manner, that I had much ado to refrain from weeping also, when I beheld the poor creature's affection: so that I was forced to comfort him in the best manner I could, which I did, by telling him, if he was content to abide with me, I should be everwilling to keep him.

After Friday's grief was something abated, more fully to convince me of his affection, he said, "O master, me" not care to be in my nation, leave you here; me desire "nation learn good, that's all;" meaning, that his desire was for the conversion of that barbarous people. But as I had no apostolic mission, nor any concern about their salvation; so I had not the least intention or desire of undertaking it; and the strength of my inclination, in order to escape, proceeded chiefly from my late discourse with Friday, about these seventeen white bearded men, that had been driven upon the Barbarian coast; whom I designed to

josn, intent fell, wander finding in the thing ter,

comn W conv was I the n of th fayir that colo the a m he l vity told the dex kin for we:

> lau am na fai wi

m,

im

to ar to w

ir h that

nade

fion;

hich

o my

eak.

with

live

ain.

ear

iod,

vay,

ture

t to

ave

fter

ble

d 3-

alle

in's

of

to

all

me'

an

ad.

he

rt

ig

er-

y

e

e

I

join, as the only means to further our escape. To which intent my man and I went to search for a proper tree to sell, whereof we might make a large periagua or canoe, to undertake the voyage; and, indeed, we were not long in sinding one sit for our purpose, their being enough of wood in the island to have built a sleet of large vessels, but the thing we principally wanted was to get one so near the water, that we might launch it after it was sinished, and not commit so horrid a mistake as I has done once before.

Well, after a great fearch for what was best and most convenient, Friday, at last, whose judgment in such affairs was much superior to mine, pitches upon a kind of wood the most fitting for it. To this day I cannot tell the name of the tree, nor describe it any other way, than only by faying, that it is very like that we call fustic, or betweenthat and the Nicaragua wood, being much of the fame colour and smell. But though my man exceeded me in the knowledge of the most proper tree, yet I shewed him a much better and clearer way to make a canoe than ever he knew before: for he was for burning the hollow or cavity of the tree, in order to make this boat; but I then told him how he might do it with tools, learning him at the same time how to use them, which indeed he did very dexterously; so that in a month's time we finished it, making it very handsome, by cutting the outside in the true fore we could get her into the water, which we did, as it were, inch by inch, upon great rollers: but when she was in, she would have carried twenty men, with all the ease imaginable.

As I was very well pleased, you may be sure, at the launching of this man of war of mine, I was no less amazed to behold with what dexterity my man would manage her, turn her, and paddle her along. Well, Friday, said I, what do you think of it now? Do you think this will carry us over? "Yes, master," said he, "me venture over well, though great blow wind." But my design was yet farther, which he was insensible of; and that was to make a mast and sail, and to provide her with an anchor and cable. As to a mast, that was no difficult thing at all to procure: so I fixed upon a straight young cedar-tree, which I found near the place, great plenty of it abounding in the island; and setting Friday to cut it down, I gave him particular directions how to shape and order it; but as

Taf

Fr

of

for

Il

gu

de

. OV

the

liv

If

I

an

an

ge

m

Or

he

m

fti

W

to

W

m

n

a

fi

P

te

2

1

. 0

1

N

C

n

h

br

to the fail, that I managed myfelf. I very well knew I had some old ones, or pieces of sails enough, which had lain six and twenty years by me; but not being careful to preserve them, as thinking I should have no occasion to use them any more, when I came to overlook them, I found them almost all rotten, except two; and with these I went to work, and after a great deal of pains and awkward tedious stitching for want of needles, at length I sinished a three cornered ugly thing, like that we call in England a shoulder of mutton sail, to go with a boom at bottom, and a little small sprit at the top, like those which our long-boats use, and which I very well knew how to manage; especially since it was like that which I had in my patron's sissing boat, when, with my boy Xury, I made my escape from the Barbarian shore.

It was near two months, I think, before I completed this work, that is, the rigging and fitting my mast and fails; and indeed they were nicely done, having made a small stay, and a fail, or a foresail to it, to assist, if we should turn to the westward; and, what is still more, I fixed a rudder to the stern of her, to steer with; and though I was but a very indifferent shipwright, yet, as I was sensible of the great usefulness and absolute necessity of a thing like this, I applied myself to it with such a constant application, that at last I accomplished my design; but what failure of many things, it cost me as much panis and the ing as in making the boat. Befides, when all this was done, I had my man to teach what belonged to its navigation: for though he very well understood how to paddle a canoe along, he was an utter stranger to a fail and a rudder, and was amazed when he faw me work the boat to and again in the fea, by them, and how the fail gibbed and filled this way or that way, as the courfe we failed changed. After some time and a little use, I made all these things very familiar to him, fo that he became an expert failor, except in relation to the compais, and that I could make him understand but little of. But, as it happened, there was feldom occasion for it, there being but little cloudy weather, and scarce any fog in those parts; the stars were always visible in the night, and the shore perspicuous by day, except in the rainy season, which confined every one to his habitation. Thus entered in the seven and twentieth year of my reign, or captivity, which you pleafe, (the

Taft three of which, bleffed with the company of my man Friday, ought not to be reckoned) I kept the anniversary of my landing here, with the same thankfulness to God, for his tender mercies, as I did before; and certainly, as I had great cause for a thankful acknowledgement for my deliverance at first, I had much greater now for such singular and additional testimonies of the care of Providence over me, in all my distresses of both body and mind, and the great hopes I had of being effectually and speedily delivered; for I had a strong impression upon my mind, that I should not be another year in this island. But, however, I still continued on with my husbandry, digging, planting, and fencing, as usual; gathering and curing my grapes, and doing all other things that were necessary.

And now the rainy season beginning to come on, obliged me to keep the longer within doors; but before this, I brought my new vessel into the creek, where I had landed my rasts from the ship, and haling her up to the shore, I ordered my man Friday to dig a dock sufficient to hold her in, and deep enough to give her water, wherein she might float; and then when the tide was out, we made a strong dam cross the end of it, to keep out the water; by which means she lay dry, as to the tide from the sea; and to keep the rain from her, we thatched her over, as it were with boughs of trees, like a house; so we waited for the months of November and December, in which I designed

to venture over the ocean.

F

d

0

e

d

t

a

3

1

No fooner did the feafonable weather begin to draw near, but so much was I elevated with this new designed adventure, that I daily prepared for the voyage. first thing I thought on was, to lay by a certain quantity of provisions, as a sufficient store for such an expedition, intending in a week or fortnight's time to open the dock, and to launch out the boat for that purpole. But one morning as I was very bufy upon fomething necessary for this occasion, I called Friday to me, and bid him go to the sea shore, and see if he could find a turtle or tortbise, a thing which we commonly had once a week, as much upon account of the eggs, as for the fake of the flesh. He had not been long gone, but he came running back, as though he was purfued for life, and as it were flew over my outer wall, or fence, like one that felt not the ground, or steps he fet his feet on; and before I had time to inquire the reason of his precipitation, he cries out, " O dear ma-

elc

an

for

inl

the

tin

fo

Fr

th

br

in

W

fe

C

h

t

. 1

1

£

.

fter, O forrow, forrow! Bad! O bad!" Why, what's the matter Friday? faid. "O yonder, yonder!" faid he, " there be one, two, or three canoes! two, three!" Surely (thought I) there must be six, by my man's way of reckoning; but, on a stricter inquiry, I found there were but three. Well, Friday, faid I, don't be terrified, I warrant you we will not only defend ourselves against them, but kill the most of these cruel savages. But though I comforted him in the best manner I could, the poor creature trembled fo, that I scarce knew what to do with him:-"O master," said he, "they come look Friday, cut pieces " Friday, cut a me up." Why Friday, said I, they will eat me up as well as you, and my danger is as great as yours. But fince it is fo, we must resolve to fight for our lives. What fay you? Can you fight, Friday? "Yes," faid he, very faintly, " me shoot, me kill what I can, but "there come great many number." That's no matter, faid I again, our guns will terrify those that we do not kill; I am very willing to stand by you to the last drop of my blood. Now tell me, if you will do the like by me, and obey my orders in whatfoever I command? Friday then answered, "O master, me lose life for you, me " die when you bid die." Thus concluding all questions concerning his fidelity, immediately I fetched him a good dram of rum, (of which I had been a very good husband) and gave it him to comfort his heart. After he had drank it, I ordered him to take the two fowling pieces, which we always carried, and load them with large swan shot, as big as small pistol bullets; then I took four muskets, and loaded them with two flugs, and five small bullets each; charging my two piftols each with a brace, I hung my great fword, as customary, naked to my side, and gave Friday his hatchet, as a most excellent weapon for defence.

Thus prepared, I thought as well of myself as any knight-errant that ever handled a sword and spear. I took my perspective glass, and went up to the side of the hill, to see what I could discover; and I perceived very soon, by my glass, that they were one and twenty savages, three prisoners and three canoes, and that their chief concern seemed to be the triumphant banquet upon the three poor human bodies, a thing which by this time I had observed was very common with them. I also remarked, that they did not land at that place from whence Friday made his

t's

iid

1"

of

re

Ir-

ut

n-

re

es

H

13

11

"

ıt

,

t

P

ł

and where a thick wood came very close to the sea. My soul was then filled with indignation and abhorrence at such inhuman wretches, which put a period to all my former thoughts in their vindication, neither would I give myself time to consider their right of conquest, as I had done before: but descending from the mountain, I came down to Friday, and told him, I was resolved to go speedily to them, and kill them all; asking him again, in the same breath, if he would stand by me: When by this time being recovered from his fright, and his spirit much cheered with the dram I had given him, he was very pleasant; yet seriously telling me, as he did before, "When I bid die," he would die."

And now it was, having fixed my resolution in so strong a manner, that nothing could divest my breast of its uncommon fury. I immediately divided the loaded arms To my man Friday I gave a postol to stick in betwixt us. his girdle, with three guns upon his shoulder, a weight too great I confess to bear; but what must a poor king do, who had but one foldier in the world? But to shew I made him bear no more than what I would lay on myself, I stuck the other pistol in my girdle, and the other three guns upon my shoulders: nay, something more, but that was like Æsop's burden, a small bottle of rum, which was soon lightened to our exceeding refreshment. Thus we marched out, under a ponderous load of armour, like two invincible champions, with a quantity of powder and bullets to fland our battle, and load again, when the pieces were discharged. And now my orders being to be obeyed, I charged Friday to keep close behind me, and not to stir, or shoot, or attempt any thing till I commanded him; and, in the interim, not to speak so much as one word. It was in this order I fetched a compass to the right hand, of near a mile, as well to get over the creek, as to attain the wood; and by this, I thought to come within shot of them before I could be differned, as I found by my glass, would not be difficult to eccomplish.

But how fickle and wavering is the mind of men, even in our greatest fury and strongest inclinations? For while I was taking this march, my resolution began to abate, not through fear of their numbers, who were a parcel of naked unarmed wretches, but those resections occurred to my thoughts: what power was I commissioned with, or

this

yon

whi

nnc

the

per

fion

abl

for

oth

no

VI

tio

fu

ez

e

d

1

t

k

F

what occasion or necessity had I to go and imbrue my hands in human blood, and murder people that had neither done nor intended to do me any wrong? They were innocent in particular as to me; and their barbarous custom was not only their misfortune but a fign that God had left them in the most immense stupidity; but yet did not warrant me to be a judge of their actions, much less an executioner of his righteous judgments: That, on the contrary, whenever he thought fit, he would take vengeance on them himself, and punish them in a national way, according to their national crimes; but this was nothing at all to me, who had no concern with them. Indeed my man Friday might justify himself, because they were his declared enemies, of that very fame nation that went to facrifice him before; and, indeed, it was lawful for him to attack them, which I could not fay was fo with respect to me. So warmly did these things press upon my thoughts all the way I went, that I only resolved to place myself so as to behold their bloody entertainment, without falling upon them, except something more than ordinary, by God's special direction, should oblige me thereto.

Thus fixed in my resolution, I entered into the thick wood, (my man Friday following me close behind) when with all possible weariness and silence, I marched till I came to the fkirt of it, on that fide which was the nearest to them; for only one end of the wood interposed between me and them. Upon which I called very foftly to Friday; and shewing him a great tree, that was just at the corner of the wood, I ordered him to repair thither, and bring me word, if he could plainly perceive their actions; accordingly, he did as I commanded him, and came back with this melancholy story, that they were all about their fire, eating the flesh of one of their prisoners; and that anotherlay bound upon the fand, at a little distance from them, which they designed for their next facrifice; and this, he told me, was not one of their nation, but one of those very bearded men, who was driven by a florm into their country, and of whom he had so often talked to me about. You may be sure, that upon hearing this, my foul was ready to fink within me : when ascending up into a tree, I faw plainly, by my glass, a white man, who lay upon the beach of the sea, with his hands and feet tied with flags, or things refembling rushes, being covered with clothes, and feemed to be an European. From the tree where I took

er om ft

r-

1-

e

-

it

n

d

this prospect I perceived another tree, and a thicket beyond it, about fifty yards nearer to them than where I was, which, by taking a small circle round, I might come at undiscovered, and then I should be within half a shot of these devourers. And this consideration alone, to be more perfectly revenged upon them, made me withhold my passion, though I was enraged to the highest degree imaginable; when going back about twenty paces, I got behind some bushes, which held all the way till I came to the other tree; and then I ascended to a little rising ground, not above eighteen yards distance, and there I had a full view of these creatures, and I could perceive all their actions.

Such a fight did then appear, as obliged me not to lose a moment's time. No less than nineteen of these dreadful wretches fat upon the ground, close huddled together, expressing all the delight imaginable at so barbarous an entertainment; and they had just fent the other two to murder this poor unhappy Christian, and bring him limb by limb to their fire; for they were then just going to untie the bands from his feet, in order for death, as fetters are knocked off the feet of malefactors before they go to the place of execution. Hereupon, immediately turning to my man, now, Friday, faid I, mind what I fay, fail in nothing, but do exactly as you fee me do. All which he promising he would perform, I set down one of my muskets, and the fowling piece upon the ground, and Friday did the fame by his; and with the other mulket I took my aim at the favages, bidding him do the like: Are you ready? faid I: " Yes, Master," faid he, why then fire at them. faid I; and that very moment I gave fire likewise.

I only killed one, and wounded two; but my man Friday, taking his aim much better than I, killed two, and wounded three. You may be fure they were in a dreadful conflernation, at such an unexpected disaster; and those who had yet escaped our penetrating shot, immediately jumped upon their feet, but were in such a confusion, that they knew not which way to run or look; not knowing from whence their destruction came. We threw down our pieces, and took up others, giving a second dreadful volley; but as they were loaded only with swan shot, or small pistol bullets, we perceived only two of them fall; though many were wounded, who run yelling and screaming about

F

like mad creatures. Now, Friday, faid I, lay down your piece and take up the musket, and follow me. He did so, with great courage, when shewing curselves to the savages, we gave a great shout, and made directly to the poor victim, who would have been facrificed, had not our first fire obliged the butchers, with three others, to jump into a canoe. By my order, Friday fired at them, at which shot I thought he had killed them all, by reason of their falling to the bottom of the boat; however, he killed two, and mortally wounded a third. In the mean time, I cut the flags that tied the hands and feet of the poor creature, and lifting him up, asked him in the Portuguese tongue, What he was? He answered me in Latin, Christianus: but so very weak and faint, that he could scarce stand or speak. Immediately I gave him a dram, and a piece of bread to cherish him, and asked him, What countryman he was? He faid Hispaniola, and then uttered all the thankfulness imaginable for his deliverance. Signior, said I, with as much Spanish as I was master of, let us talk afterwards, but fight now; here, take this fword and pistol, and do what you can. And, indeed, he did so with such courage and intrepidity, that he cut two of them to pieces in an instant, the lavages not having the power to fly for their lives. I ordered Friday to run for those pieces we had left at the tree, which he brought me with great swiftness, and then I gave him my musket, while I loaded the rest. But now there happened a fierce encounter between the Spaniard and one of the favages, who had made at him with one of their wooden swords; and though the former was as brave as could be expected, having twice wounded his enemy in the head; yet being weak and faint, the Indian had thrown him upon the ground, and was wresting my sword out of his hand, which the Spaniard very wifely quitting, drew out his pistol, and shot him through the body before I could come near him, though I was running to his affistance. to Friday, he pursued the flying wretches with his hatchet, despatching three, but the rest were too nimble for him. The Chaniard taking one of the fowling pieces, wounded two, who running into the wood, Friday pursued and killed; but the other, notwithstanding his wounds, plunged himfelf into the fea, and fwam to those who were left in the canoe, which, with one wounded, were all that escaped out of one and twenty. The account is as follows:

of

an

af

re

to

F

fu

fo

V

W

fp

u

ſį

W

h

b

il

C

OF ROBINSON CRUSUB.			123
Killed at first shot from the tre	ee,	-	- 3
At the fecond shot, -	-		- 2
By Friday in the boat,	•	-	- 6
Ditto, of those first wounded,	•	-	- 2
Ditto, in the wood, -	-	•	- 1
By the Spaniard, -	•	•	- 3
Killed, or died of their wound	S,		-
Escaped in the boat, whereof o	ne wou	nded, if	not flain, 4

2

Total 21

The favages in the canoe worked very hard to get out of our reach, and Friday was as eager in pursuing them; and, indeed, I was no less anxious about their escape, lest, after the news had been carried to their people, they should return in multitudes, and destroy us. So being resolved to pursue them, I jumped into one of their canoes, and bid Friday follow me; but no fooner was I in, than, to my furprife, I found another poor creature, bound hand and foot for the flaughter, just as the Spaniard had been, with very little life in him. Immediately I unbound him, and would have helped him up : but he could neither stand nor speak, but greaned so piteously, as thinking he was only unbound in order to be flain. Hereupon I bid Friday fpeak to him, and tell him of his deliverance; when pulling out my bottle, I made the poor wretch drink a dram, which, with the joyful news he had received, fo revived his heart, that he fat up in the boat. As foon as Friday began to hear him speak, and look more fully in his face, it would have moved any one to tears to perceive his uncommon transports of joy; for he kissed, embraced him, hugged him, cried, laughed, hallooed, jumped about, danced, fung, then cried again, wrung his hands, beat his face and head, then fung and jumped about again, like a distracted creature: so that it was a great while before I could make him speak to me, or tell me what was the matter with him; but when he came to the liberty of his speech, at last he told me it was his father.

Here indeed I was infinitely moved to fee that dutiful and tender affection this poor favage had to his aged parent. He would fit down by him in the boat, open his breast, and hold his father's head close to his bosom, half an hour together, to cherish him: then he took his arms and ancles, which were stiff and numbed, with binding, and

100

run

cre

me

we

ha

wi

ha

m

up

fu

CC

ki

P

60

d

fi

i

d

chafed and rubbed them with his hands; by which means, perceiving what the case was, I gave him some rum, which

proved of great benefit to him.

While we were bufy in this action, the favages had gotten almost out of sight; and happy it was we did not pursue them: For there arose from the north-west, which continued all night long, such a violent storm, that I could not suppose otherwise but that they were all drowned. After this is called Friday to me, and asked him, if he had given his father any bread? He shook his head, and said, "None, "not one bit, me eat-a up all;" so I gave him a cake of bread out of a little pouch I carried for this end. I likewise gave him a dram for himself, and two or three bunches of raisins for his father. Both these he carried to him, for he would make him drink the dram to comfort him.

Away he then runs out of the boat as if he was bewitched, with such an extraordinary swiftness, that he was out of sight as it were in an instant; but, at his return, I perceived him slacken his pace, because he had something in his hand. And this I found to be, as he approached nearer, an earthen jug with some water for his father, with two more cakes of bread, which he delivered into my hands. Being very thirsty myself, I drank some of the water, of which when his father had drunk sufficiently, it more re-

vived his spirits than all the rum I had given him.

I then called Friday to me, and ordered him to carry the Spaniard one of the cakes, and some water, who was reposing himself upon a green place, under the shade of a tree, but so weak, that though he exerted himself, he could not stand upon his feet. Upon which I ordered Friday to rub and bathe his ancles with rum, as he did his father's. But every minute he was employed in this he would cast a wishful eye towards the boat, where he left his father fitting; who fuddenly disappearing, he slew like lightening to him, and finding he had only laid himself down to ease his limbs, he returned back to me presently, and then I spoke to the Spaniard to let Friday help him, and lead him to the boat, in order to be conveyed to my dwelling, where I would take care of him. Upon which Friday took him upon his back, and so carried him to the canoe, setting him close by his father; and presently stepping out again launched the boat off, and paddled it along the shore faster than I could walk, though the wind blew very hard

too; and having brought them safe to the creek, away he runs to setch the other canoe, which he brought to the creek almost as soon as I got to it by land, when wasting me over, he took our new guests out of the boat; but so weak were they, that I was forced to make a kind of a hand-barrow; and when I came to my castle, not being willing to make an entrance into my wall, we made them a handsome tent, covered with old sails, and boughs of trees, making two good beds of rice straw, with blankets to lie upon and cover them. Thus, like an absolute king, over subjects who owed their lives to me, I thought myself very considerable, especially as I had now three religions in my kingdom, my man Friday being a Protestant, his father a Pagan, and the Spaniard a Papist: but I gave liberty of conscience to them all.

To get provisions for my poor weak subjects, I ordered Friday to kill me a yearling goat; which when he had done, I cut off the hinder quarters, and chopping it into small pieces, boiled and stewed it, putting barley and rice into the broth. This I carried into their tent, set a table, dined with them myself, and encouraged them. Friday was my interpreter to his father, and indeed to the Spaniard too, who spoke the language of the savages pretty well. After dinner I ordered Friday to fetch home all our arms from the field of battle, and the next day to bury the dead

bodies, which he did accordingly.

t-

ie

1-

ot

er

n

of

-

)

And now I made Friday inquire of his father, whether he thought these favages had escaped the late storm in their canoe? and if fo, whether they would not return with a power too great for us to refift? He answered, that he thought it impossible they could outlive the storm; or, if they were driven fouthwardly, they would come to a land where they would as certainly be devoured, as if they were drowned in the fea. And suppose they had attained their own country, the strangeness of their fatal and bloody attack, would make them tell their people, that the rest of them were killed by thunder and lightening, not by the hand of man, but by two heavenly spirits (meaning Friday and me) who were fent from above to deffroy them. And this, he faid, he knew, because he heard them say the same to one another. And indeed he was in the right on't; for I have heard fince, that these four men gave out, that whoever went to that inchanted island, would be destroyed by fire from the gods.

F 3

and

eve

mo

cur

all

an

dr

the

bu

CU

pr

d

d

e

No canoes appearing foon after, as I expected, my apprehensions ceased: Instead of which my former thoughts of a voyage took place, especially when Friday's father asfured me I should have good usage in his nation. the Spaniard, he told me, that fixteen more of his countrymen and Portuguese, who had been ship wrecked, made their escape thither; that though they were in union with the favages, yet they were very miserable for want of provisions and other necessaries. When I asked him about the particulars of his voyage, he answered that their ship was bound from the Rio de la Plata to the Havannab; that when the ship was lost, only five men perished in the ocean; the rest having saved themselves in the boat, were now landed on the main continent. And what do they intend to do there? faid I. He replied, they have concerted meafures to escape, by building a vessel, but that they had neither tools nor provisions, so that all their designs came to nothing. Supposing, said, I, I should make a proposal, and invite them here, would they not carry me prisoner to New Spain? he answered no; for he knew them to be such honest men, as would scorn to act such inhuman baseness to their deliverer: That, if I pleased, he and the old savage would go over to them, talk with them about it, and bring me an answer: That they should all swear fidelity to me as their leader, upon the Holy Sacrament; and, for his part, he would not only do the same, but stand to the last drop of his blood, should there be occasion.

These solemn assurances made me resolve to grant them relief, and to fend these two over for that purpose; but when every thing was ready, the Spaniard raised an objection, which carried a great deal of weight in it: "You "know, Sir," faid he, "that having been some time with " you, I cannot but be sensible of your stock of rice and " corn, sufficient, perhaps, for us at present, but not for es them, should they come over presently; much less to victual a vessel for an intended voyage. Want might " be as great an occasion for them to disagree and rebel, " as the children of Ifrael did against God himself, when "they wanted bread in the wilderness. And, therefore, or my advice is, to wait another harvest, and in the mean time cultivate and improve some more land, whereby " we may have plenty of provisions, in order to execute " our defign,"

This advice of the Spaniard's I approved extremely;

p-

hts af-

to

nde

ith

0-

ut

at

1;

W

to

0

d

U

0

and so satisfied was I of his fidelity, that I esteemed him ever after. And thus we all four went to work upon fome more land, and against seed time we had gotten so much cured and trimmed up, sufficient to sow twenty-two bushels of barley on, and fixteen jars of rice, which was in short all the feed we had to spare. As we were four in number, and by this time all in good health, we feared not an hundred Indians, should they venture to attack us; and while the corn was growing, I pitched upon some trees, fit to build us a large vessel, in case the Spaniards came over; which being marked, I ordered Friday and his father to cut them down, appointing the Spaniard, who was now my privy counsellor, to overfee and direct the work. I likewife increased my flocks of goats, by shooting the wild dams, and bringing home their kids to my inclosure: Nor did I neglect the grape feafon, but cured them as usual, though I had such a quantity now, as would have filled eighty barrels with raisins. And thus all of us being employed, they in working, and I in providing for them, till harvest came, God Almighty blessed the increase of it so much, that from twenty-two barrels of barley, we thrashed out two hundred and twenty, and the like quantity of rice, sufficient to victual a ship fit to carry me and all the Spaniards to any part of America.

Thus the principal objection being answered, by a sufficient stock of provisions, I sent my two ambassadors over to the main land, with a regal authority to administer the oaths of allegiance and sidelity, and have an instrument signed under their hands, though I never asked whether they had pen, ink, or paper; when giving each of them a musket, eight charges of powder and ball, and provisions enough for eight days, they sailed away with a fair gale,

on a day when the moon was at full.

Scarce a formight had passed over my head, but, impatient for their return, I laid me down to sleep one morning, when a strange accident happened, which was ushered in by Friday's coming running to me, and calling aloud, "Master, master, they are come, they are come." Upon which, not dreaming of any danger, out I jumped from my bed, put on my clothes, and hurried through my little grove; when looking towards the sea, I perceived a boat about a league and a half distant, standing in for the shore, with the wind fair. I beheld they did not come from the side where the land lay on, but from the southermost end

F 4

It

for

at

fca

pl

tic

W

ha

bu

th

h

to

f

of the island: So these being none of the people we wanted, I ordered Friday to lie still, till such time as I came down from the mountain, which, with my ladder, I now afcended, in order to discover more fully what they were; and now, with the help of my perspective glass, I plainly perceived an English ship, which I concluded it to be, by the fashion of its long boat; and, which filled me with such uncommon transports of joy, that I cannot tell how to describe; and yet some secret doubts hung about me, proceeding from I know not what cause, as though I had reafon to be upon my guard. And, indeed, I would have no man contemn the fecret hints and intimations of danger, which very often are given, when he may imagine there is no possibility of its being real; for, had I not been warned by this filent admonition, I had been in a worse situation than before, and perhaps inevitably ruined.

Not long it was, before I perceived the boat to approach the shore, as though they looked for a place where they might conveniently land; and at last they ran their boat on shore upon the beach, about half a mile's distance; which proved so much the happier for me, since, had they come into the creek, they had landed just at my door, and might not only have forced me out of my castle, but plundered me of all I had in the world. Now I was sully convinced they were all Englishmen, three of which were unarmed and bound; when immediately the sirst four or sive leaped on shore, and took those three out of the boat as prisoners; one of whom I could perceive used the most passionate gestures of entreaty, affliction, and despair, while the others, in a lesser degree, shewed abundance of con-

Not knowing the meaning of this, I was very much aftonished, and I beckened to Friday, who was below, to ascend the mountain, and likewise view this fight. "O master," said he to me, "you see English mans eat "prisoners as well as Savage mans." And do you think they will eat them, Friday? said I. "Yes," said Friday, "they eat-a all up." No, no, said I, Friday, I am much more concerned lest they murder them; but as for eating them up, that I am sure they will never do.

And now I not only lamented my misfortune in not having the Spaniard and Savage with me, but also that I could not come within shot of them unperceived, (they having no fire arms among them) and save these three men, whom ne

w

e;

ly

by ch

e-

0-

a -

0

r,

e

-

n

I thought they were going to kill with their fwords. fome comfort it was to me, that I perceived they were fet at liberty to go where they pleased, the rascally seamen scattering about as though they had a mind to see the place: and fo long did they negligently ramble, that the tide had ebbed fo low, as to leave the boat aground. were the two men that were in her more circumspect; for having drunk a little too much liquor, they fell fast asleep; but one of them waking before the other, and perceiving the boat too fast aground for his strength to move it, he hallooed out to the rest, who made all possible expedition to come to him; but, as Providence ordered it, all their force was ineffectual to launch her, when I could hear them speak to one another, "Why, let her alone, Jack, can't ye, she'll float next tide," by which words I was fully convinced they were my own countrymen. I all this while lay very quiet, as being fully fensible it could be no less than ten hours before the boat would be affoat, and then it would be so dark, that they could not easily perceive me, by which means I should be at more liberty to hear their talk, and observe all their motions: not but that I prepared for my defence: yet, as I had another fort of enemy to combat with, I acted with more caution. I took two fufees on my shoulder, and gave Friday three muskets; befides my formidable goat-skin coat and monstrous cap made me look as fierce and terrible as Hercules of old, especially when two pistols were stuck in my belt, and my naked fword hanging by my fide. ...

It was my defign at first not to make any attempt till it was dark; and it being now two o'clock, in the very heat of the day, the sailors were all straggling in the woods, and undoubtedly were lain down to sleep. The three poor distressed creatures, too anxious to get any repose, were however seated under the shade of a great tree, about a quarter of a mile from me. Upon which, without any more ado, I approached towards them, with my man following behind me, and, before I was perceived, I called aloud to

them in Spanish, "What are ye, Gentlemen?"

At these words, they started up in great confusion, when they beheld the strange sigure 1 made; they returned no answer, but seemed as if they would fly from me: "Gen-" tlemen," said I, in English, "don't be asraid, perhaps "you have a friend nearer than you expect." "He must be from Heaven," said one of them, gravely pulling off

his hat, for we are past all help in this world." "All help is from Heaven," said I: "But, Sir, as I have perceived every action between you and these brutes since your landing, only inform me how to assist you, and I

" will do it to the utmost of my power."

" Am I talking with God or man," faid he, in melting " Are you of human kind, or an angel?" "Sir," faid I, " my poor habit will tell you I am a man, and an " Englishman, willing to affist you, having but this fervant only: here are arms and ammunition: tell freely your " condition : 'Can we fave you?" " The flory," faid he, is too long to relate, fince our butchers are fo near : but, " Sir, I was master of that ship, my men have mutinied, " and it is a favour they have put my mate, this passenger, " and me, on shore without murdering us, though we ex-" pect nothing but perishing here." " Are your enemies " gone?" faid I. " No," replied he, pointing to a thicket, " there they lie, while my heart trembles, left, having feen " and heard us, they should murder us all." " Have they " fire arms?" faid I. " They have but two pieces," faid he, " one of which is left in the boat." He also told me, there were two enormous villains among them, that were the authors of this mutiny, who, if they were killed or feized, might induce the rest to return to their obedience. "Well, well," faid I, " let us retire farther under " the covering of the woods:" and there it was I made these conditions with him:

I. That, while they staid in the island, they should not pretend to any authority; but should entirely conform to my orders, and return me the arms which I should put in

their hands.

II. That, if the ship was recovered, they should afford

Friday and myself a passage gratis to England.

When he had given me all the satisfaction I could desire, I gave him and his two companions each of them a gun, with powder and ball sufficient, advising them to fire upon them as they lay sleeping. The Captain modestly said, that he was forry to kill them; though, on the other hand, to let these villains escape, who were the authors of his misery, might be the ruin of us all. "Well," said he, "do as "you think sit:" and so accordingly I fired, killed one of the Captain's chief enemies, and wounding the other, who eagerly called for assistance; but the Captain, who had referved his piece, coming up to him, "Sirrah," said he, "tis too late to call for assistance, you should rather cry

to God to pardon your villainy;" and so knocked him down with the stock of his gun: three others were also flightly wounded, who, at my approach, cried out for This the Captain granted, upon condition that mercy. they would swear to be true to him in recovering the ship, which they folemnly did; however I obliged the Captain to keep them bound. After which I fent Friday and the Captain's mate to secure the boat, and bring away the oars and fails; when, at their return, three men coming back, and feeing their late distressed Captain, now their conqueror, submitted to be bound also. And then it was, that having more liberty, I related the adventures of my whole life, which he heard with a serious and wonderful attention. After this, I carried him and his two companions into my little fortified cafile, shewed them all my conveniences, and refreshed them with such provisions as I could afford. When this was over, we began to consider about regaining the ship; he said that there were twenty-fix hands on board, who, knowing their lives were fortified by the law, for conspiracy and mutiny, were so very hardened, that it would be dangerous for our fmall company to attack them. This was a reasonable inference indeed; but something we must resolve on, and immediately put in execution: we, therefore, heaved the boat upon the beach fo high that she could not shoot off at high water mark, and broke a hole in her not easily to be stopped; so that all the signals they gave for the boat to come on board were in vain. This obliged them to fend another boat ashore, with ten men armed, whose faces the Captain plainly descried, the boatswain being the chief officer; but he said there were three honest lads among them, who were forced into the conspiracy. Hereupon I gave him fresh courage (for I had perceived he was in concern): in the mean while fecuring our prisoners, except two, whom we took to our affiftance, we thought ourselves able enough to adventure a When the failors landed, and beheld their boat in that condition, they not only hallooed, but fired, for their companions to hear, yet they received no answer. This fruck them with horror and amazement, thinking their companions were murdered, they made as if they would return to the ship. I could perceive the Captain's countenance change at this, till, of a sudden, three men were ordered to look after the boat, while the other feven leapt on shore, in order to search for their companions: and,

Atl

ee [

lie,

hin

arı

the

ex E

fo

C

m

je

tv

th

W

p

indeed, they came to the brow of the hill, near my ancient castle, from whence they could see to a great distance in the woods, and their shouting and hallooing till tired and weary, they at length feated themselves under a spreading tree. My opinion was, that nothing could be done till night, when I might use some artifice to get them all out of the boat; but, of a sudden they started up, and made to the sea side; hereupon I ordered Friday and the Captain's mate to go over the creek, and halloo as loud as they could, and fo decoying them into the woods, come round to me again. And this, indeed had good effect; for they followed the noise, till coming westward to the creek, they called for their boat to carry them over, and taking one of the men out of her, left two to look after her, having fastened her to the stump of a little tree on shore. Hereupon immediately the Captain and our party passing the creek, out of their fight, we furprifed them both, by the Captain's knocking down one, and ordering the other to furrender upon pain of death, and who, being the honestest of them all, fincerely joined with us. By this time it was pretty late; when the rest returning to their boat, which they found aground in the creek, the tide out, and the men gone, they ran about wringing their hands, crying it was an inchanted island, and that they should be all murdered by spirits or devils. My men would willingly have fallen upon them, but I would not agree to hazard any of our party. But to be more certain, Friday and the Captain crawled upon their hands and feet, as near as possible; and, when the boatswain approached in fight, so eager was the Captain, that he fired, and killed him on the fpot; Friday wounded the next man, and a third ran away. Hereupon I advanced with my whole army; and, it being dark, I ordered the man we had furprifed in the boat, to call them by their names, and to parley with them. Accordingly he called out aloud, " Tom Smith, Tom Smith!" He anfwered, "Who's that?" "Robinfon!" answered the other. " For God's fake, Tom, furrender immediately, or you're " all dead men." " Who must we surrender to?" fays Smith. "To our Captain and fifty men here, who have taken me prisoner, wounded Will Frye, and killed the " boatswain." " Shall we have quarters then?" said he. Hereupon the Captain calls out, "You, Smith, you know my voice, furrender immediately, and you shall all have your lives granted, except Will Atkins." Hereupon

2

Atkins cries out, "What have I done Captain, more than "the rest, who have been as bad as me?" But that was a lie, for he was the person that laid hold of him, and bound him. However, he was ordered to submit to the governor's mercy, for such I was called. And so, laying down their arms, we bound them all, and seized on their boat.

After this, the Captain exposulated with them, telling them that the governor was an Englishman, who might execute them there; but he thought they would be fent to England, except Will Atkins, who was ordered to prepare for death next morning. Hereupon Atkins implored the Captain to intercede for his life, and the rest begged they might not be fent to England. This answered our project for feizing the ship. For after fending Atkins and two of the worst fast bound to the cave, and the rest being committed to my bower, I fent the Captain to treat with them in the governor's name, offering them pardon if they would affift in recovering the ship. Upon which they all promised to stand by him till the last drop of their blood; and whoever acted treacherously, should be hanged in chains upon the beach. They were all released on these affurances; and then the Captain repaired to the other boat, making his passenger Captain of her, and gave him four men well armed; while himself, his mate, and five more, went in the other boat. By midnight they came within call of the ship, when the Captain ordered Robinfon to hale her, and tell them that with great difficulty they had found the men at last. But while they were difcourfing, the Captain, his mate, and the rest entered, and knocked down the fecond mate and carpenter, fecured those that were upon the deck, by putting them under hatches, while the other boat's crew entered and secured the forecastle; they then broke into the round-house, where the mate, after some resistance, shot the pirate Captain through the head, upon which all the rest yielded themfelves prisoners. And thus the ship being recovered, the joyful fignal was fired, which I heard with the greatest joy imaginable: nor was it long before he brought the ship to an anchor at the creek's mouth, where coming to me unawares, "There," fays he, " my dearest friend and de-" liverer, there is your ship, and we are your servants :" a comfort so unspeakable, as made me swoon in his arms, while, with gratitude to Heaven, we were tenderly embracing each other.

a fe

the

he

but

hav

the

wh

the

if .

tui

po

he

he

an

bu

V

fo

th

W

Nothing now remaining, but to confult what we should do with the prisoners, whom he thought it was not safe to take on board. Hereupon concerting with the Captain, I dreffed myself in one of his fuits, and fending for them, told them, that I was going to leave the island with all my people, if they would tarry there, their lives should be spared; if not, they should be hanged at the first port they came at. They agreed to flay. Hereupon I told them my whole story, charging them to be kind to the Spaniards that were expected, gave them all my arms, and informing them of every thing necessary for their subsistence, I and my man Friday went on board. But the next morning two of the men came swimming to the ship's side, desiring the Captain to take them on board, though he hanged them afterwards, complaining mightily how barbaroufly the others used them. Upon which I prevailed with the Captain to take them in and being feverely whipt and pickled, they proved more honest for the future. And fo I bid farewel to this island, carrying along with me my money, my parrot, umbrella, and goat-skin cap; fetting fail December 12, 1686, after twenty-eight years, two months, and nineteen days residence, that same day and month that I escaped from Salee, landing in England, June 11, 1687, after five and thirty years absence from my own country, which rendered me altogether a stranger there.

Here I found my first Captain's widow alive, who had buried a second husband, but in very mean circumstances, and whom I made easy upon his account. Soon after I went down to Yorkshire, where all my family were expired, except two fifters, and as many of one of my brother's children. I found no provision had been made for me, they concluding I had been long fince dead; fo that I was but in a very slender station. Indeed the Captain did me a great kindness, by his report to the owners, how I had delivered their ship on the Desolate Island, upon which they made me a present of 2001. sterling. I next went to Lisbon, taking my man Friday with me, and there arriving in April, I met the Portuguese Captain, who had taken me on board on the African coast; but, being ancient, he had left off the fea, and refigned all his business to his son, who followed the Brazil trade. altered both of us were, that we did not know each other at first, till I discovered myself more fully to him. After

uld

to

, [

m,

ny be

ey

m

ds

ng nd

g

gd

y

d

d

a few embraces, I began to inquire of my concerns; and then the old gentleman told me, that it was nine years fince he had been at Brazil, where my partner was then living, but my trustees were both dead; that he believed I should have a good account of the product of my plantation: that the imagination of my being loft, had obliged my trustees to give an estimate of my share to the procurator-fiscal, who, in case of my not returning, had given one third to the king, and the rest to the monastry of St. Augustine: but if I put in my claim, or any one for me, it would be returned, except the yearly product which was given to the poor. I then defired them to tell me what improvement he thought had been made of my plantation, and whether he imagined it was worth my while to look after it? he answered, he did not know how much it was improved; but this he was certain of, that my partner was grown vastly rich upon his half of it; and, that he had been informed, that the king had 200 moidores per annum for his third part. He added, that the furvivors of my trustees were persons of an ingenuous character; that my partner could witness my title, my name being registered in the country, by which means I should indispensibly recover confiderable fums of money. But, answered I, how could my trustees dispose of my effects, when I made you only my heir? This, faid he, was true; but, there being no affidavit made of my death, he could not act as my executor. However, he had ordered his fon, (then at Brazil) to act by procuration upon my account, and he had taken possession of my sugar-house, having accounted himself for eight years with my partner and trustees for the profits, of which he would give me a very good account.

And, indeed, this he performed very faithfully in a few days, making the lindebted to me 470 moidores of gold, over and above had been loft at fea, after I had left the place. Another he recounted to me what misfortunes he had gone through, which forced my money out of his hands, to buy part in a new ship: "but," says he, "you shall not want, take this; and, when my son returns, every farthing shall be paid you." Upon which he put into my hand a purse of 150 moidores in gold, as likewise the instrument, containing the title to the ship which his son was in, and which he offered as security for the remainder. But really when I saw so much goodness, generosity,

louf

tog

AW

thre

fen:

us :

mi

an

hit

aff

ma

ad

fu

m

fo

66

I,

16

..

b

f

h

t

tenderness, and real honesty, I had not the heart to accept it, for fear he should straiten himself upon my account. "It is true," faid he, " it may be so; but then the money is yours, not mine, and you may have the greatest oc-" casion for it." However, I returned fifty of them back again, promising that I would freely forgive him the other hundred when I got my effects into my hands, and that I defigned to go myself for that purpose. But he told me he could fave me that trouble, and so caused me to enter my name with a public notary, as likewise my affidavit, with a procuration affixed to it; and this he ordered me to fend in a letter to one of his acquaintance, a merchant in Brazil: and, indeed, nothing could be more faithfully and honourably observed; for, in seven months time, I had a very faithful account of all my effects, what fums of money were raised, what expended, and what remained for my use: In a word, I found myself to be worth 5000l. sterling, and 1000l. per annum. Nor was this all; for my partner congratulated me upon my being alive, telling me how much my plantation was improved, what Negroes were at work, and how many Ave Marias he had faid to the Virgin Mary for my prefervation, defiring me to accept kindly some presents he had sent me, which I found shewed the greatest generosity.

No sooner did the ship arrive, but I rewarded my faithful Captain, by returning him the hundred moidores, and not only forgiving him all he owed me, I allowed him yearly a hundred more, and fifty to his son, during their lives. And now being resolved to go to England, I returned letters of thanks to the Prior of St. Augustine, and in particular to my old partner, with very suitable presents. By the Captain's advice, I was persuaded to go by land to Calais, and there take passage for England; when, as it happened, I got a young English gentleman, a merchant's son at Lisbon, to accompany me, together with two English, and two Portuguese gentlemen; so that with a Portuguese servant, an English sailor, and my man Friday,

Thus armed and equipped, we fet out, and came to Madrid, when the summer decaying, we hasted to Navarre, where we were informed, that there was scarcely any passing, by reason of the prodigious quantity of snow; so that we were obliged to abide near twenty days at Pampeluna, and at last to take a guide to conduct us safe towards Tho-

ept

nt.

ey

C-

ck

er

I

ne

13

it,

to

in

d

a

-

r

louse. And now twelve other gentlemen joining with us, together with their servants, we had a very jolly company. Away our guide led us by the frightful mountains, and through so many intricate mazes and windings, that we insensibly passed them, which, as we travelled along, ushered us into the prospect of the fruitful and charming provinces

of Languedoc and Gascoigne. But now came on two adventures, both tragical and co-First, our guide was encountered by three wolves and a bear, who fet upon him and his horse, and wounded him in three places; upon which my man, riding up to his affiftance, shot one of them dead upon the spot, which made the others retire into the woods. But the pleasantest adventure was, to behold my man attack the bear. fuch a creature, that if you let him alone, he will never meddle with you: and this my man very well knew, and fo begging leave of me in broken English, he told us, " he "would make good laugh." "Why, you filly fool," faid I, "he'll eat you up at a mouthful." "Eatee me up," replied he, by way of fcorn, " me not only eatee him, but " make much good laugh." Upon which, pulling off his boots, he claps on his pumps, and running after the monstrous beast, he called out, that he wanted to discourse with him, and then throwing stones on purpose to incense him, the beast turns about in fury, and, with prodigious strides, shuffles after him. But though he was not fwift enough to keep up pace with Friday, who made up to us as it were for help; yet being angry, "You dog," faid I, " imme-" diately take horse, and let us shoot the creature." But he cried, "Dear master, no shoot, me make you laugh "much." And so he turned about, making signs to sollow, while the bear ran after, till coming to a great oak, he ascended in a minute, leaving his gun at the bottom of it. Nor did the bear make any difficulty of it, but ascended like a cat, though his weight was very great. You must confider I was not a little amazed at the folly of my man, as not perceiving any thing to occasion our laughter, till fuch time as we rode up nearer, and beheld the beaft mounted upon the oak, on the beginning of the fame branch, to which Friday clung at the farther end, where the bear durst not come. Hereupon Friday cried out, Now, mafter, me make much laugh, me make bear " dance." Upon which he fell a shaking the bough, which made the creature look behind him, to fee how he

Then as if the bear had understood his could retreat. stammering English; "Why you no come farther, Mr. "Bear?" faid he, "pray, Mr. Bear, come farther:" and then indeed we all burst into a laughter, especially when we perceived Friday drop like a squirrel upon the ground, leaving the beaft to make the best of his way down the And now thinking it the most convenient time to shoot the creature, Friday cried out, " O dear master, no " shoot, me shoot by and by;" when taking up the gun, " me no shoot yet," faid he, " me make once more much " laugh." And accordingly he was as good as his word; for the creature descending backwards from the tree very leifurely, before he could lay one foot on the ground, Friday shot him through the ear, stone dead : and looking to to see whether we were pleased, he burst out into a hearty laughter, faying, " So we kill de bear in my country, not " with the gun, but with much long arrows." Thus ended our diversion, to our great satisfaction; especially in a place where the terrible howlings struck us with a continual terror. But the fnows now growing very deep, particularly on the mountains, the ravenous creatures were then obliged to feek for fustenance in the villages, were coming by furprise on the country people, killed several of them, besides a great number of their sheep and horses.

Our guide told us, we had yet one more dangerous place to pass by; and if there were any more wolves in This was a small the country, there we should find them. plain encompassed with woods, to get through a long lane to the village where we were to lodge. When we entered the wood, the fun was within half an hour of fetting; and a little after it was fet, we came into the plain, which was not above two furlongs over, and then we perceived five great wolves cross the road, without taking notice of us, and so swift as though they were pursuing after their prey. Hereupon our guide, believing there were more coming, defired us to be upon our guard. Accordingly our eyes were very circumspect, till about half a league farther, we perceived a dead horse, and near a dozen of wolves devouring its carcase. My man Friday fain would have fired at them, but I would not permit him; nor had we gone half over the plain, but we heard dreadful howlings in a wood on our left, when presently we saw an hundred come up against us, as though they had been an experienced army. This obliged us to form ourselves in the

fhor a f ever no peccano we the the local get the a

bell

ha a d w fi

W

ar

1

best manner; and then, I ordered that every other man should fire, that those who did not, might be ready to give a second volley, should they advance upon us; and then every man should make use of his pistols. But there was no necessity for this; for the enemy being terrified, stopped at the noise of the fire; four of them were shot dead, and several others being wounded, went bleeding away, as we could very plainly discover by the snow. And now remembering what had been often told me, that such was the majesty of a man's voice, as to strike terror even in the siercest creatures, I ordered all our companions to halloo as loud as possible; and in this notion I was not altogether mistaken; for they immediately turned about upon the first halloo, and began to retire; upon which, ordering a second volley in their rear, they gallopped into the woods

with great precipitation.

his

Mr. and

we nd,

the

e to

no

un, ich

d;

ry

rito

ty

ot

ed

a

al

1-

n

3

1

Į.

Thus we had some small time to load our pieces again, and then made all the haite we could on our way; but we had not rode far, before we were obliged to put ourselves in a posture of defence as before, being alarmed with a very dreadful noise in the same wood, on our lest hand, the same way as we were to pass, only that it was at some distance from us. By this time the darksome clouds began to spread over the elements, and the night growing very dusky, made it so much the more to our disadvantage; but still the noise increasing, we were fully assured, that it was the howling and yelling of those ravenous creatures; when presently three troops of wolves on our front, appeared in fight, as though a great number of them had a defign to furround us, and devour us in spite of fate. But as they did not fall upon us immediately, we proceeded on our journey in as swift a manner as the roads would permit our horses, which was only a large trot. It was in this manner we travelled, till such time as we discovered another wood, and had the prospect of its entrance through which we were to pass, at the farthest side of the plain. furely none can express the terror we were in, when approaching the lane, we perceived a confused number of the fiercest wolves, standing, as it were, guarding its entrance. Nor were we long in this amazement, before another accafion of horror presented itself; for suddenly we heard the report of a gun at another opening in the wood, and, tooking that way, out ran a horse bridled and saddled, flying with the greatest swiftness, and no less than fixteen or seventeen wolves pursuing after him, in order to devour the poor creature: and unquestionably they did so, after they had run him down, not being able to hold out that swiftness

the

of

be

an

th

by

fo

ot

de

th

at

to

th

ne

la

ol

fe

TO

ti

T

to

n

W

E

0

I

t

C

1

t

with which he at first escaped them.

When we rode up to that entrance from whence the horse came forth, there lay the carcases of another horse and two men, mangled and torn by these devouring wolves: and undoubtedly one of these men was the person who fired the gun which we had heard, for the piece lay by him; but, alas! most of the upper part of his body and his head were entombed in the bowels of these ravenous creatures.

What course to take, whether to proceed or retreat, we could not tell; but it was not long before the wolves themselves made us to come to a resolution: for such numbers surrounded us, every one of whom expected their prey, that, were our bodies to be divided among them, there would not be half a mouthful a-piece. But happy, very happy it was for us, that but a little way from the entrance, there lay some very large timber trees, which I supposed had been cut down and laid there for sale; amongst which I drew my little troop, placing ourselves in a line behind one long tree, which served us for a breast work, when defiring them to alight, we stood in a triangle, or three fronts, closing our bodies in the centre, the only place where we

could preserve them.

Never certainly was there a more furious charge than what the wolves made upon us in this place; and the fight of the horses, which was the principal prey they aimed at, provoked their hunger and added to their natural fierceness. They came on us with a most dreadful noise, that made the woods ring again; and beginning to mount the pieces of timber, I ordered every man to fire as before directed: and, indeed, so well did they take their aim, that they killed feveral of the wolves at the first volley; but still we were obliged to keep a continual firing, by reason they came on like devils, pushing one another with the greatest But our fecond volley fomething abated their courage, when stopping a little, we hoped they would have made the best of their way; however, it did not prove so, for others made a new attempt upon us; and though in four firings we killed seventeen or eighteen of them, laming twice as many, yet they several times successively came on, as though they valued not their lives for the fake of their prey.

he

ey

efs.

rle

VO

nd

he

it,

re

ve:

1-

15

y,

re :

ry

e,

d

h

d

-

5, .

6

n

t

,

3

Y

Unwilling was I to spend our last shot too suddenly, and therefore called my other fervant, and giving him a horn of powder, bid him lay a large train quite along the timber, which he did, while Friday was charging my fulee and his own, with the greatest dexterity. By this time the wolves coming up the timber, I fet fire to the train, by fnapping a discharged pistol close on the powder. This fo scorched and terrified them, that some fell down, and others jumped in among us; but these were immediately despatched, when all the rest, frighted with the light, which the darksome night caused to appear more dreadful, began at length to retire; upon which, ordering our last pistols to be fired at once, giving at the same time a great shout, the wolves were obliged to have recourse to their swiftnels, and turn tail; and then we fallied out upon twenty lame ones, cutting them in pieces with our fwords, which obliged them to howl lamentably, to the terror of their fellows, who refigned to us the field as victorious conque-And, indeed, I question whether Alexander, king of Macedonia, in any of his conquests, had more occasion for triumph than we had; for he was but attacked with numerous armies of foldiers; whereas our little army was obliged to combat a legion of devils, as it were, worse than the cannibals, who, the same moment had they slain us, would have facrificed us, to fatisfy their voracious appetites.

Thus ended our bloody battle with the beafts, having killed threescore of them, and saved our lives from their fury. We still had a league farther to go, when, as we went, our ears were faluted with their most unwelcome howlings, and we expected every moment another attack. But, in an hour's time, we arrived at the town where we were to lodge; and here we found the place strictly guarded, and all in terrible confusion, as well they might, for fear of the bears and wolves breaking into the village, in order to prey upon their cattle and people. morning we were obliged to take a new guide, by reason the other fell very bad of his wounds, which he had received, as before-mentioned. After we had reached Thoulouse, we came into a warm, pleasant, and fruitful country, not infested with wolves, nor any fort of ravenous creatures; and when we told our story there, they much blamed our guide, for conducting us through the forest at the foot of the mountains, in such a severe season, when

fati

COL

ber

viv

que

fpc

mi

the

fan

poi

and

de

abo

tur

on

mi

OW

CO

ret

my

pie

do

lik

fai

25

fir

pr

ce

be

no

fo

CO

fo

m

dr

fa

th

in

the fnow obliged the wolves to feek for shelter in the woods. When we informed them in what manner we placed ourselves, and the horses in the centre, they exceedingly reprehended us, and told us, it was an hundred to one, but we had been all destroyed; for that it was the very fight of the horses, their so much defired prey, that made the wolves more ragingly furious than they would have been, which was evident, by their being at other times really afraid of a gun; but then being exceedingly hungry and furious upon that account, their eagerness to come at the horses made them insensible of their danger; and that, if we had not, by a continual fire, and at last by the cunning stratagem of the train of powder, got the better of them, it had been great odds if their number had not overpowered us; besides, it was a great mercy we alighted from our horses, and fought them with that courage and conduct, which, had we failed to do, every man of us, with our beafts, had been devoured; and, indeed, this was nothing but truth: for never, in my life, was I fo fensible of danger, as when three hundred devils came roaring upon us, to thun whose unwelcome company, if I was fure to meet a storm every week, I would rather go a thousand leagues by sea.

I think I have nothing uncommon in my passage through France to take notice of, since other travellers of greater learning and ingenuity, have given a more ample account than my pen is able to set forth. From Tholouse I travelled to Paris, from thence to Calais, where I took shipping, and landed at Dover the 14th of January, in a very cold season.

Thus come to the end of my travels, I foon discovered my new found estate, and all the bills of exchange I had were currently paid. The good ancient widow, my only privy counsellor, thought no pains nor care too great to procure my advantage; nor had I ever occasion to blame her sideity, which drew from me an ample reward. I was for leaving my essects in her hands, intending to set out for Lisbon, and so to the Brazils: but as in the Desolate Island I had some doubts about the Romish religion, so I knew there was little encouragement to settle there, unless I would apostatize from the orthodox faith, or live in continual fear of the Inquisition. Upon this account I resolved to sell my plantation; and, for that intent, I wrote to my old friend at Lisbon, who returned me an answer to my great

fatisfaction; which was, that he could fell it to good account: however, if I thought it convenient to give him liberty to offer it in my name to the two merchants, the survivors of my trustees, residing at the Brazils, who consequently knew its intrinsic value, having lived just upon the spot, and who I was sensible were very rich, and therefore might be the more willing to purchase it: he did not in the least doubt, but that I should make four or sive thousand pieces of eight more of it, than I could do, if I disposed o it in any other manner whatsoever.

You may be fure I could not but agree with this kind and ingenuous proposal; and immediately I sent him an order to offer it to them, which he accordingly did: so that about eight months after, the ship being in that time returned, he gave me a satisfactory account, that they not only willingly accepted the offer, but that they had also remitted 33,000 pieces of eight to a correspondent of their

own at Lisbon, in order to pay for the purchase.

Hereupon, in return, I figned the instrument of sale according to form, which they had sent from Lisbon, and returned it again to my old friend, he having sent me, for my estate, bills of three hundred and twenty-eight thousand pieces of eight, reserving the payment of one hundred moidores per annum, which I had allowed him during life, likewise sifty to his son during life also, according to my faithful promise, which the plantation was to make good

as a rent charge.

ls.

r-

e-

ut

ht

ne

n,

ly

be

ne

t,

1-

of

ot

t-

e

s,

is

0

e

I

2

h

r

t

d

And thus having led my reader to the knowledge of the first parts of my life, so remarkable for the many peculiar providences that attended it, floating in an ocean of uncertainty and disappointment, of advertity and prosperity, beginning foolishly, and yet ending happily; methinks, now that I am come to a fafe and a pleasant haven, it is time to cast out my anchor, and, laying up my vessel, bid, for a-while, adieu to foreign adventures. I had no other concerns to look after, but the care of my brother's two ions, which, with the good widow's persuasions, obliged me to continue at home seven years. One of these children I bred up a gentleman, and the other an experienced failor, remarkable for his courage and bravery. Besides this, I married a virtuous young gentlewoman, of a very good family, by whom I had two fons and one daughter. But my dear and tender wife leaving this earthly stage (as in the second part of my life you will hear,) which rent my foul as it were asunder, my native country became weary and tiresome to me: and my nephew happening to come from sea, tempted me to venture another voyage to the East Indies, which I did in the year 1694, at which time I visited my island, and informed myself of every thing

that happened fince my departure.

One might reasonably imagine, that what I had suffered, together with an advanced age, and the fear of losing, not only what I had gotten, but my life also, might have choaked up all the feeds of youthful ambition and curiofity, and put a lasting period to my wandering inclinations. But as nothing but death can fully allay the active part of my life, no less remarkable for the many various contingencies of it, you will next perceive how I visited my little kingdom, faw my fuccessors the Spaniards, had an account of the usage they met with from the Englishmen, agreeing and disagreeing, uniting and separating, till at last they were subjected to the Spaniards, who yet used them very honour. ably, together with the wonderful and successful battles over the Indians who invaded, and thought to have conquered the island, but were repelled by their invincible courage and bravery, having taken eleven men and five women prisoners, by which, at my return, I found about twenty young children on my little kingdom. Here I staid twenty days, left them supplies of all necessary things, as also a carpenter and smith, and shared the islands into parts, referving the whole property to myself. Nor will you be infensible, by the account of these things, of several new adventures I have been engaged in, the battles I have fought, the deliverances I have met with: and while, in the furprising relation of such remarkable occurrences, I shall describe many of God's kindest providences to me in particular, no less conspicuous in the same goodness, power, and majesty of our great Creator, shewn one way or other, ever the face of the earth, if duly adverted to.

n

0

fi

b

ta

in

a

II

in

fc

de

af

..

ad

ROBINSON CRUSOE,

ry

he ne ng

d,

ot k-

nd

as e,

it,

ge

if-

b-

r.

es

n-

le

ve

ut

id

as

S,

be

W

re

in

I

in

r,

r,

Wherein are contained several strange and surprising accounts of his Travels, and his most remarkable transactions both by sea and land; with his wonderful Vision of the Angelic World.

WHEN we consider the puissant force of Nature, and what mighty influence it has many times over the temper of the mind, it will be no fuch great wonder to think, that my powerful reason should be overcome by a much stronger inclination. My late acquired kingdom ran continually in my thoughts all the day, and I dreamed of it in the night: nay, I made it the continual subject of my talk, even to impertinence, when I was awake. fuch vapours in my head, that I actually supposed myself at my castle; that I not only perceived Friday's father, but the old Spaniard, and the wicked failors, but that I stalked and discoursed with them about their manner of living: that I heard the things related to me, which I found afterwards to be too true; and that I executed my judgments with the greatest severity upon the offenders. And, indeed, this anticipating all the pleasing joys of my life, scarcely afforded me one pleasant hour: my dear and tender wife could not but take notice of it, which drew these affectionate speeches from her: " My dear," said she, " I " am really perfuaded that some secret impulse from Heaven occasions in you a determination to see the island " again; nor am I less sensible, but your being engaged to me, and these dear children, is the only hinderance " of your departure. I know, my dear, if I was in the grave, you would not long continue at home: prevent " not your happiness upon my account, whose only com-" fort centres in you. All that I can object is, that such " an hazardous undertaking is no way confishent with 2 " person of your years; but if you are resolved to go," added she, weeping, "only permit me to bear you com-" pany, and that is all that I defire."

G

Such endearing tenderness, graced with the most innocent, and yet most powerful charms, brought me insensibly into my right understanding; and when I considered all the transactions of my life, and particularly my new engagement; that I had now one child already born, and my wife big of another; and that I had no occasion to seek for more riches, who already was bleffed with fufficiency, with much struggling I altered my resolutions at last, resolving to apply myself to some business or other, which might put a period to fuch wandering inclinations. Hereupon I bought a little farm in the county of Bedford, with a refolution to move thither: upon this there was a pretty convenient house, surrounded with land, very capable of improvement, which fuited my temper, as to planting, managing, and cultivating. Nor was I long before I entered upon my new fettlement, having bought ploughs, harrows, carts, waggons, horses, cows, and sheep: so that I now led the life of a country gentleman, and as happy in my retirement as the greatest monarch in the world. And what made me think my happiness the greater was, that I was in that middle state of life, which my father had fo often recommended, much resembling the felicity of a rural retirement, which is elegantly described by the poet in these lines :

> Free from all vices, free from care, Age has no pain, and youth no snare.

u

a

ta

0

tl

re

ft

le

CC

m

W

va

ou

mi

be

But, in the midst of this my happiness, I was suddenly plunged in the greatest forrow that I could possibly endure; for when I least expected it, my dear and tender wife was forced to submit to the irresistible power of death, leaving this transitory life for a better. It is impossible for me to express the beauties of her mind, or the loveliness of her person; neither can I too much lament her loss, which my latest breath shall record; her influence was greater over me than the powers of my own reason, the importunities of friends, the instructions of a father, or the melting tears of a tender and disconsolate mother; in a word, she was the spirit of all my affairs, and the centre of my enterprizes. But now, fince the cruel hand of death had closed my dearest's eyes, I seemed in my thoughts a stranger to the world; my privy counsellor being gone, I was like a thip without a pilot, that could only run before the wind. And when I looked around me in this bufy world, one part

labouring for bread, and the other squandering away their estates; this put me in mind how I had lived in my little kingdom, where both reason and religion dictated to me, that there was something that certainly was the reason and end of life, which was far superior to what could be hoped for on this side the grave. My country delights were now as insipid and dull, as music and science to those who have neither taste nor ingenuity. In short, resolving to leave off house-keeping, I left my farm, and in a few months returned to London.

But neither could that great city, so famous for its variety of entertainment, afford me any agreeable delight; a state of idleness I found to be the very dregs of life, and most hurtful to body and soul. It was now the beginning of the year 1694, at which time my nephew (who, as I before observed, had been brought up to the sea, and advanced to be captain of a ship) was returned from a short voyage to Bilboa, the first he had made in that station. He comes to me one morning, telling me, that some merchants of his acquaintance had proposed to him to go a voyage for them, to the East-Indies and China, in the manner of private traders: " and now, uncle," said he, if you'll accompany me thither, I'll engage to land you upon your old island, to visit the state of your little kingdom."

Just before he came in, my thoughts were fixed to get a patent for its possession, and then to fill it with inhabitants. After I had paused awhile, and looked stedfastly on him, "What devil , or spirit," faid I, "fent you with this unlucky errand?" He started at first; but recovering himself, when he perceived I was not offended; "Sir," replied he, " what I have proposed cannot, I hope, be flyled unlucky, fince certainly you must be defirous to fee your little territory, where you reigned with more content than any of your brother kings in the universe." " Nephew," faid I, " if you will leave me there, and call for me as you come back, I care not if I give my confent: but he answered, that the merchants would not allow their vessel, loaden with an infinite value, to return there again, which was a month's fail out of the way; "besides, Sir," said he, " if I should miscarry, was your request granted, why then you would be locked up as before." This, indeed, carried a great deal of reason in it; but we found out a remedy, and

S

g

0

r

y

75

25

'3

15

r-

d

to

a

d.

rt

Go

that was to carry a framed floop on board, ready to be fet up in the island, by the assistance of some carpenters, which we should carry with us, that might be sitted in a few days to go to sea. I was not long in forming my resolution, which over-swayed my good friend the widow's persuasions, and the natural affection I bore to my young children. I made my will, and settled my estate in such manner, that I was perfectly sure that my poor infants would have justice done them. The good widow not only undertook to make provision for my voyage, but also took the charge of my domestic affairs, and to provide for my children's education; and indeed no mother could take more care, or understood that office better; for which I lived to reward, and

return her my hearty thanks.

The beginning of January, 1694-5, my nephew being ready to fail, I and Friday went on board in the Downs on the 8th, having, besides that sloop already mentioned, a very confiderable cargo for my new colony. First, I had fome fervants, whom I proposed to leave there, as they should appear willing; there were two carpenters, a smith, and a very ingenious fellow who was Jack of all trades; for he was not only a cooper by trade, but also he was dexterous at making wheels and hand-mills to grind corn, likewise a good turner, and a good pot-maker. I also carried a tailor, who confented to flay in my plantation, and proved a most necessary fellow in the island. As to my cargo, it confished of a sufficient quantity of linen, and English stuffs, for clothing the Spaniards that I expected to find there; as likewise gloves, hats, shoes, stockings; together with beds, bedding, and household stuff, especially kitchen utenfils, with pots, kettles, pewter, brass, &c. also nails, tools of all forts, starles, hooks, hinges, and all other things necessary; all which, I think, cost me about three hundred pounds. Nor was this all: for I carried an hundred spare arms, muskets, and susees, besides some pistols, a confiderable quantity of several forts of shot, two brass cannon, besides swords, cutlasses, and the iron part of some pikes and halberts. I made my nephew take with us two small quarter deck guns, more than he had occasion for in his ship, to leave behind, if there was a necesfity; fo that we might build a fort there, and man it against all opposers whatsoever.

Well, we put out to sea; and though I can't say this voyage was so unprosperous as my others had been, yet

O

t

u

f

n

contrary winds drove us fo far northward, that we were obliged to put in at Galway in Ireland, where we lay wind bound two and twenty days. Here indeed our provisions were very cheap, and we added to our ship's stores by taking feveral live hogs, two cows, and calves, which I then refolved to put on shore in my island, if our necesfities did not call for them. On the 5th of February we failed from Ireland, with a very fair gale, which lasted for fome days; and I think it was about the 20th of the same month, late in the evening, when the mate informed us that he faw a flash of fire, and heard a gun fired: and when he was fpeaking, a boy came in and told us, that the boatswain had heard another. Upon which we all ran to the quarter deck, from whence, in a few moments, we perceived a terrible fire at a distance. We had immediately recourse to our reckonings, in which we were all of opinion, that there could be no land that way, it appearing to be at N. N. W. Hereupon we concluded that some ship had taken fire at sea, and that it could not be far off, by the report of the guns which we had heard. We made up directly to it, and in half an hour's time, the wind being fair, we could plainly perceive a great ship on fire, in the middle of the sea. Touched with this unhappy disaster, and confidering my former circumstances, when the Portuguese Captain took me up, I immediately ordered five guns to be fired, that the poor creatures not feeing us, it being dark, (though we could perceive their flame) might be sensible there was deliverance at hand, and consequently might endeavour to fave themselves in their boat. was it long before the ship blew up in the air, and the fire was extinguished in the ocean. But supposing them all to be in their boats, we hung out our lanterns, and kept firing till eight o'clock in the morning; when, with our perspectives, we beheld two boats full of people, making towards us, though the tide was against them : then spreading out our ancient, and hanging out a waft, as a fignal for them to come on board, in half an hour's time, we came up to them, and took them all in, their being no less than fixty-four men, women, and children. It was a French merchant ship of three hundred tons, homeward-bound from Quebec, in the river of Canada. The master informed me how, by the negligence of the steersman, the steerage was set on fire: that, at his out-cry for help, the fire was, as we thought, totally extinguished; but, that

mg

pr

fa

th

he

hi

fe

tu

th

8

P

T

fome sparks getting between the timber, and within the cieling, it proceeded into the hold, where there was no refisting it: that then they got into their boats, as creatures in the last extremity, with what provision they had, together with oars, fails, and a compass, intending to go back to Newfoundland, the wind blowing at S. E. and by E. though there were several chances against them, as storms to overset and founder them, rains and colds to benumb and perish their limbs, and contrary winds to keep them back and starve them; but, said he, in this our great distress, we heard the welcome report of your guns, when with unspeakable joy, taking down our masts and sails, we were refolved to lie by till morning: but perceiving your light, we fet our oars at work to keep our boat a head, the foener to attain your ship, the happy instrument of our deliverance.

Indeed, no one can express the joy of these poor creatures on this occasion; fear and grief are easily set forth; fighs and tears, with a few motions of the hands and head, are all the demonstrations of these passions; but an excess of joy, carries in it a thousand extravagances; especially, I think, among the French, whose temper is allowed to be more volatile, passionate, sprightly, and gay, than that of other nations. Some were weeping, tearing themselves in the greatest agonies of sorrow, and running stark mad about the ship, while the rest were stamping with their feet, wringing their bands, finging, laughing, fwooning away, vomiting, fainting, with a few returning hearty thanks to the Almighty, and croising themselves. I think, if I am not mistaken, our surgeon was obliged to let thirty of them But among the passengers, there were two priests, the one an old, and the other a young man; but what amazed me more was, that the oldest was in the worst plight; for no sooner did he perceive himself freed from danger, but he dropt down, as it were without life, and to every one's appearance quite dead; but the surgeon chafing and rubbing his arm, opened a vein, which at first dropped, and then flowing more freely, the old man began to open his eyes, and in a quarter of an hour was well again. But foon remembering this happy change, the joy of which whirled his blood about faster than the vessels could convey it, he became so feverish, as made him more ht for bedlam than any other place; but the surgeon givmg him a fleepy dose, he was perfectly composed the next

morning.

Remarkable, indeed, was the behaviour of the young At his entrance on board the ship, he fell on his face in the most humble prostration to the Almighty. thought, indeed, he had fallen into a swoon, and so ran to help him up; but he modeftly told me, he was returning his thanks to the Almighty, defiring me to leave him a few moments, and that, next to his Creator, he would return me thanks alfo. And, indeed, he did fo about three minutes after, with great feriousness and affection, while the tears flood in his eyes, which convinced me of the gratitude of his foul. Nor did he less shew his piety and wisdom, in applying himself to his country people, and labouring to compose them, by the most powerful reasons, arguments, and persuasions. And when, indeed, these people had taken their night's repose, in such lodgings as our ship would allow, we found nothing but the best of manners, and the most civil acknowledgments, for which the French are eminently remarkable. The next day the Captain and one of the priests desired to speak with me, and my nephew the commander. They told us, that they had faved some money and valuable things out of the ruined vessel, which was at our service: only that they defired to be fet on shore some where in our way. first, my nephew was for accepting the money; but I (who knew how hard my case would have been, had the Portuguese Captain served me so) persuaded him to the contrary; and therefore told them, that as we had done nothing but what we were obliged to do, by nature and humanity, and what we ourselves might expect from others in fuch calamity; so we took them up to fave them, not to plunder them, or leave them naked upon the land, to perish for want of subfishence, and therefore would not accept their money: but as to landing them, that was a great difficulty; for, being bound to the East Indies, it was impossible wilfully to change our voyage upon their particular account, nor could my nephew who was under charter party to pursue it by way of Brazil) answer it to the freighters. All that we could do, was to put ourselves in the way of meeting some ships homeward bound from the West Indies, that, if possible, they might get a passage to France or England. Indeed, they were very thankful for our first kindness; but were under great con-

pe:

wh

th

to

ha

fo

m

ac

m

B

ge

th

d

it

V

P

cern especially the passengers, at their being carried to the East Indies. They begged, therefore, I would keep on the banks of Newfoundland, where probably they might meet with some ship, or sloop, to carry them to Canada, whence they came. As this was but a reasonable request, I was inclined to grant it, fince it was no breach of charter-party, and that the laws of God and nature obliged us to do what good we could to our fellow creatures; and besides the danger we ourselves should be in for want of provisions: so we consented to carry them to Newfoundland, if wind and weather would permit; if not, that we should carry them to Martinico in the West-Indies. But, as it. happened, in a week's time we made the banks of Newfoundland, where the French people hired a bark to carry them to France. But the young priest being desirous to go to the East-Indies, I readily agreed to it, because I liked his conversation, and two or three of the French sailors also entered themselves on board our ship.

Now, directing our course for the West-Indies, steering S. and S. by E. about twenty days, with little wind, another adventure happened to exercise our humanity. In the latitude of 27 degrees 5 minutes north, the 19th of March 1694-5, we perceived a sail, (our course S. E. and by S.) which bore upon us, and then she appeared to be a large vessel, having lost her main top-mast, and boltsprit; when string a gun, as a signal of distress. wind N. N. W. we soon came to speak with her. She was a ship from Bristol, bound home from Barbadoes, out of which road she had been forced by a hurricane to the westward, in which they

loft their masts.

They told us, their expectations were to fee the Bahama islands, but were driven away by a strong wind at N. N. W. and having no sails to work the ship with, but the main course, and a kind of a square sail upon a jury fore-mast, because they could not come near the land, were endeavouring to stand for the Canaries: nay, what was worse, besides all their satigue, they were almost starved for want of provision, having ate nothing for eleven days; all that they had aboard was sugar, a barrel of fresh water, and seven casks of rum. In this ship were passengers, a youth, his mother, and a maid servant, who were in a most deplorable condition for want of food. If I had not gone on board their ship, the knowledge of their misery had been concealed from me, and they would have inevitably

10

n

at

1,

13

t.

perished; though, indeed, their second mate who was Captain, by reason the true Captain was not on board when the hurricane happened) had before informed me that there were such persons on board, whom he supposed to be dead, being afraid to inquire after them, because he had nothing to give them for relief. Hereupon we refolved to let them have what we could spare, ordering the mate to bring some of his men on board us, which he did accordingly: at he and they looked like skeletons, when meat was fet before them, I ordered them to eat sparingly. But, however, they foon fell fick; which obliged the furgeon to mix fomething in their broth, which was to be to them both food and physic. When they were fed, we ordered our mate to carry them a fack of bread, and four or five pieces of beef; but the surgeon charged them to see it boiled, and to keep a guard on the cook-room, to prevent the men from eating it raw, and confequently killing themselves with what was designed for their relief. particularly, I defired the mate to fee what condition the poor passengers were in, and the surgeon gave him a pitcher of the same broth which he had prepared for the men. And being curious to fee this scene of misery myself, I took the Captain (as we called the mate of the ship) in our own boat, and failed after them.

Here was a fad fight indeed! scarce were the victuals half boiled in the pot, but they were ready to break open the cook-100m door. To stay their stomachs the mate gave them biscuits, which were dipped in and softened with the liquor of the meat, which they call Bruife; telling them it was for their own fafety, that he was obliged to give them but a little at a time; and so feeding them gradually, their bellies wera comfortably filled, and the men did very well again. But when they came to the poor gentlewoman in the cabin, who for feveral days had continued without food, giving what she had to her fon, they found her as it were in the arms of death. She was fitting upon the floor of the deck, with her back up against the fides, between two chairs, which were lashed fast, and her head shrunk between her shoulders, like a senseless Nothing was wanting in my mate to revive and encourage her; opening her lips, and putting some broth into her mouth with a spoon. But not having strength to speak, she listed up her head with much difficulty, intimating that it was now too late! at the same time pointing to the youth her son, as though she desired him to do what he could to save the lad; and, in a little time after, she died.

fu

CO

ce

flo

co

in

ble

re

re

th

fo

an

no

ha

VE

th

fa

fe

a

C

a

The youth, indeed, was not so far gone, yet lay stretched out on a cabin bed, like one that had scarce any life. In his mouth was a piece of an old glove, the rest of which he had ate up. At first he vomited what the mate had given him; but at length began sensibly to revive, though in the greatest concern for the death of his tender mother.

As to the poor maid, she lay by her mistress like one in the last pangs of death: her limbs were distorted, one of her hands was clasped round-the frame of a chair, which she grasped so hard that it was with some disticulty we separated her from it; her other arm lay over her head, and her feet lay both together, set fast against the frame of the cabin table; not only being starved with hunger, but overcome with grief for the loss of her mistress, whom she loved most tenderly. It was a great while before the surgeon could bring her to life, and a much longer time before she

came to her fenses.

After we had failed with them some days, we fent them, five barrels of beef, one of pork, two hogsheads of biscuit, with peas, flour, and other things: taking three casks of fugar, fome rum, and fome pieces of eight as payment, we left them, but took the youth and maid with us, with all their goods. The lad was about seventeen years old, very handsome, modest, sensible, and well bred, but mightily concerned for the loss of his honoured mother, having lost his father at Barbadoes but a few months before. He beseeched the surgeon to intercede with me to. take him out of the ship; for that the failors, not sparing a small sustenance, had starved his mother. But hunger has no bounds, no right, and consequently is incapable of any compassion. When the surgeon told him our voyage might put him in bad circumstances, and farther from his, friends, he faid, he did not care, if he was delivered from that terrible crew: that as the Captain (meaning me) had faved him from death, so he was sure he would do him no harm; and, as for the maid, when she was restored to her fenses, she would be no less thankful, let us carry them where we would. And indeed the furgeon fo represented their case to me, that I consented, and took them on board with all their goods, except eleven hogsheads of

at

le

e.

h

d

h

e

h

d

fugar; but the youth having a bill of lading, I made the commander oblige himself to deliver a letter and the deceased widow's goods to Mr. Rogers, a merchant in Briflol; but I believe the ship was lost at sea, for we never could hear what became of her afterwards. We were now in the latitude of 19 deg. 32 min. having as yet a tolerable good voyage. But, passing by several little incidents relating to wind and weather, I shall relate what is most remarkable concerning my little kingdom, to which I was then drawing near. I had great difficulty in finding it; for as I came to, and went from it before, on the fouth and east side of the island, as coming from the Brazils, so now approaching between the main and the island, not having any chart for the coast, nor land mark, it obliged us to go on shore on several islands in the mouth of the river Oroonoko, but to no purpose. Thus I perceived, that what I thought was a continent before, was no such thing, but a long island, or rather a ridge of sands. On one of these islands I found some Spaniards, but they belonged to the Isle de Trinidad, who came hither in a sloop to make falt, and try to find some pearl muscles. But at length I came fair on the fouth fide of my island, and then I prefently knew the countenance of my little kingdom: fo we brought the ship safe to an anchor, broadside within the little creek, where stood my ancient and venerable castle.

No fooner did. I fee the place, but calling for Friday, I asked him where he was? But when he looked a little, he clapped his hands, crying, "O joy, O there, O yes, O there!" pointing to our old abode, and then fell a dancing and capering as if he was mad, and I had much ado to keep him from jumping into the fea, to swim ashore. "Friday," faid I, "what do you think, shall we go to see your father?" At the mentioning his father's name, the poor affectionate creature fell a weeping: "No, no," fays he, " me see him no more, never see poor father more! he long ago die, die long ago; he much old man." "You don't know that," faid I, "but shall we see any body else?" He looks about, and pointing to the hill above my house, cries out, "We fee, we fee there much men and there;" which, though I could not perceive them with my perspective glass, was true, by what the men themselves told me the next day.

When the English ancient was spread, and three guns fired as a signal of friendship, we perceived a smoke rife.

ta

ir

e

n

F

from the creek; upon which I ordered the boat out, taking Friday with me, and hanging out a white flag of truce, I went on shore, accompanied also by the young friar, to whom I had related the history of the first part of my life; besides, we had fixteen men well armed, in case

we had met with any opposition.

After we had rowed directly into the creek, the first man I fixed my eye upon was the Spaniard, whose life I had faved, and whose face I perfectly well knew. I ordered them all to stay in the boat for a while; but Friday perceiving his father at a distance, would have jumped in the fea, had they not let the boat go. No fooner was he on shore, but he flew like a swift arrow out of a bow, to embrace his aged father. Certainly it would melt a man of the firmest resolution into the softest tears, to see with what uncommon transports of joy he faluted him; he first kissed him, then stroked his face, took him in his arms, laid him under a shady tree, sat down by him, then looked as earneftly at him, as one could do at a picture, for a quarter of an hour together. After this he would lie upon the ground, stroke his legs and kiss them, then get up and stare at him, as though he was bewitched; but the next day one could not forbear laughter to fee his behaviour, for he would walk feveral hours with his father along the shore, leading him by the hand as tho' he was a lady; while, every now and then, he would run to the boat to get fomething for him, as a lump of fugar, dram, biscuit, or something or other that was good. His frolics ran in another channel in the afternoon; when he fet old Friday on the ground, he would dance round him, making comical postures and gestures: and all this while would be telling him one story or another of his travels and adventures.

It was on the 10th of April, anno 1695, that I fet my foot upon the island a second time. When my faithful Spaniard, accompanied by one more, approached the boat, he little knew who I was, till I discovered myself to him. "Seignior," said I, in Portuguese, "don't you know me?" He spoke never a word, but giving his musket to his attendant, extended his arms, and saying something in Spanish that I did not then understand, he came forward and embraced me, saying, he was inexcusable not to know his deliverer; who, like an angel sent from Heaven, had saved his life. He then beckened to the man to call out his companions, asking me if I would walk to my own habi-

of

g

ſe

n

d

e

n

f

t

tation, and take possession, where I should find some mean improvements; but indeed they were extraordinary ones; for they had planted fo many trees so close together, that the place was like a labyrinth, which none could find out except themselves, who knew its intricate windings. asked him the meaning of all these fortifications? he told me he would give a large account of what had passed since my departure till this time, and now he had subdued some English, who thought to be their murderers, hoping I would not be displeased, fince necessity compelled them to it. As I knew they were wicked villains, fo I told him, that I was not only far from finding fault with it, but was rather heartily glad that they had subdued them. While we were thus talking, the man whom he fent returned, accompanied by eleven more, but in such habits, that it was impossible to tell what nations they were of. He first turned to me, and pointing to them, " These, Sir," said he " are fome of the gentlemen who owe their lives to your goodness;" then turning to them, and pointing to me, he made them fensible who I was; and then indeed they faluted me one by one, not as ordinary men, but as though they had been ambassadors or noblemen, and I a triumphant conqueror; for their behaviour not only agreed with a manlike, majestic gravity, but at the same time was so obliging and courteous, as made them agreeable to the last degree.

Before I relate the history of the transactions of my kingdom, as I had it from the Spaniard's own mouth, I must here insert what I omitted in my former relation. The matter is this: Just before we weighed anchor and set fail, there happened a quarrel on board the ship, which had like to have occasioned a second mutiny, till such time as the courageous Captain, taking two of the most refractory prisoners, laid them in irons, threatening, as they were concerned in the former diforders, to have them hanged in England for running away with the thip. This frightened fome of the rest, as thinking the Captain would serve them in the same manner, though he seemed to give them good words for the prefent. But the mate having intelligence of this, made me acquainted with their fears: so that, to make them more easy, and ourselves more safe from their conspiracies, I was obliged to go down, and pass my honour's word for it, that, upon their good behaviour, all that was past should be forgiven: in testimony of which,

lo

re

th

th

b

fi

te

W

to

P

n

0

d

b

I ordered the two men's irons to be taken off, and themfelves forgiven. But as this had brought us to an anchor
that night, in which there was a calm; the two men that
had been in irons stole each of them a musket, and some
other weapons, and taking the ship's pinnace, not yet hauled
up, ran away to their brother rogues. The next morning
we sent the long-boat with men to pursue them, but all in
vain; the mate, in revenge, would have demolished my
little castle, burnt its surniture, and destroyed their plantations, but having no orders for it, he did not put it in
execution. And thus there were five Englishmen in the
island, which caused great differences, as my faithful
Spaniard gave me a perfect account of, in the following
manner:

"You cannot, Sir, but remember the embaffy you fent me about, and what a disappointment we met with, by your. absence, at our return. There is but little variety in the relation of all our voyage, being bleffed with calm weather, and a smooth sea. Great indeed was the joy of my. countrymen to see me alive, having acted as the principal. man on board, the Captain of the shipwrecked vessel dying before; nor was their surprise less, as knowing I was taken. prisoner by the savages of another nation, they had thought. me long fince entombed in their monstrous bowels. But. when I shewed them the arms, ammunition, and provifions I had brought for them, they looked upon me as a fecond Joseph advanced in Pharoah's court, and immediately prepared to come along with me. Indeed they were obliged to trespass upon their friendly savages, by borrowing two of their canoes, under a pretext for fishing: and they came away the next morning, but without any provisions of their own, except a few roots, which served them instead of bread. After three weeks absence we arrived at our habitation. Here we met with three English failors, who, I confess, gave us provisions, and that letter of direction you had left for us, which informed us how to bring up tame goats, plant corn, cure grapes, make pots, and, in short, every thing that was necessary for our use. As, in particular, I knew your method best, so taking Friday's father to assist me, we managed all the affairs; nor were the rest of the Spaniards wanting in their kind offices, dreffing food for the Englishmen, who did nothing but ramble and divert themselves in the woods, either shooting parrots, or catching tortoifes. But we had not been

1

long ashore, before we were informed of two more Englishmen, naturally turned out of their common place of residence, by the three others above mentioned: this made my Spaniards and me (whom they now looked upon as their governor in your absence) endeavour to persuade them to take them in, that we might be as one family; but all our intreaties were in vain, so that the poor fellows finding nothing to be done without industry, pitched their tents on the north fide of the island, a little inclining to the west, for fear of favages. Here they built two huts, one to lodge, and the other to lay their stores in; for my good natured Spaniards giving them some seeds, they dug and planted as I had done, and began to live prettily. But. while they were thus comfortably going on, the three unnatural brutes, their countrymen, in a mere bullying humour, infulted them, by faying, the governor (meaning you) had given them a possession of the island, and d-mn 'em they should build no houses upon their ground, without paying rent. The two honest men (for so let me now distinguish them) thought their three countrymen only jested, and one of them invited them in, to fee their fine habitations; while the other facetiously told them, that fince they built tenements with great improvements, they should,. according to the custom of lords, give them a longer. lease; at the same time desiring them to fetch a scrivener. to draw the writings. One of these wretches swearing he should pay for the jest, snatches up a fire-brand, and clapping it to the outfide of their hut, very fairly fet it on. fire, which would foon have confumed it, had not the henest man thrust him away, and trod it out with his feet. Hereupon the fellow returns with the pole, with which he would have ended his days had not the poor man avoided the blow, when fetching his musket he knocked down the villain that began the quarrel, The other two coming to. affist their fellow, obliged the honest man to take his musket also, and both of them presenting their pieces, bid the villains stand off; and if they did not lay down their arms, death should decide the dispute one way or other. This brought them to a parley, in which they agreed to take their wounded man and be gone; but they were in the wrong that they did not difarm them when they had the power, and then make their complaint to me and my Spaniards for justice, which might have prevented their farther defigns against them. And indeed so many tref-

passes did they afterwards commit, by treading down their corn, shooting their young kids and goats, and plaguing them night and day, that they resolved to come to my caftle, challenge all the three, and decide their right by one plain battle, while the Spaniards stood by to see fair play. One day it happened, that two of my Spaniards (one of whom understood English) being in the woods, were met by one of the honest men, who complained how barbarous their countrymen had been in destroying their corn, killing their milk goat and three kids, which deprived them of their subfistence; and that if we did not grant them relief, they must be inevitably starved, and so they parted; but when my Spaniards came home at night, and supper being on the table, one of them began to reprehend the Englishmen, but in a very mannerly way; which they refenting, replied, "What business had their countrymen in that place without leave, when it was none of their ground?" Why," faid my Spaniard, calmly, " Inglife, they must not starve :" but they replied, " Let them starve and be damn'd, they should neither plant nor build; and damn them, they should be their servants, and work for them, for the island was theirs, and they would burn all the huts they should find in the island." " By this rule," faid my Spaniard, smiling, " we shall be your fervants too." " Aye, by G-d, and fo you shall." replied the impudent rascal. Upon which, starting up, Will Atkins cries, " Come, Jack, let's have t'other brush with them; who dare to build in our dominions?"-Thus leaving us fomething heated with just passion, away they trooped, every man having a gun, pistol, and sword, muttering fome threatening words, that we could then but imperfectly understand. That night they designed to murder their two companions, and flept till midnight in the bower, thinking to fall upon them in their sleep; nor were the honest men less thoughtful concerning them; for at this juncture they were coming to find them out, but in a much fairer way. As foon as the villains came to the huts, and found no body there, they concluded that I and my Spaniard had given them notice, and therefore swore to be Then they demolished the poor men's revenged on us. habitations; not by fire, as they attempted before, but pulled down their houses, limb from limb, not leaving flick nor stone on the ground where they stood, broke their household stuff in pieces, tore up their trees, spoiled their

incl the the ord get the tell Sp lac me geo at his en he the on the

be arrived of an the form be the

the second

d the b

inclosures, and, in short, quite ruined them of every thing they had. Had these people met together, no doubt but there would have been a bloody battle; but Providence ordered it for the better; for just as the three were got together the two were at our castle; and when they left us, the three came back again, but in great rage, scoffingly telling us what they had done; when one taking hold of a Spaniard's hat, twirls it round, faying, " And you Signior lack Spaniard, shall have the same sauce, if you don't mend you manners." My Spaniard, a grave but courageous man, knocked him down with one blow of his fift; at which another villain fired his pistol, and narrowly missed his body, but wounded him a little in the ear. Hereat enraged, the Spaniard takes up the fellow's musket whom he had knocked down, and would have shot him, if I and the rest had not come out, and taken their arms from every one of them.

"These Englishmen perceiving they had made all of us their enemies, began to cool; but notwithstanding their better words, the Spaniards would not return them their arms again, telling them, they would do them no manner of harm, if they would live peaceably; but if they offered any injury to the plantation or castle, they would shoot them as they would do ravenous beasts. This made them so mad, that they went away raging like suries of hell. They were no sooner gone, but in came the two honest men, fired with the justest rage, if such can be, having been ruined as aforesaid. And indeed it was very hard, that nineteen of us should be bullied by three villains, con-

tinually offending with impunity.

rs

"It was a great while, Sir, before we could persuade the two Englishmen from pursuing, and undoubtedly killing them with their fire-arms; but we promised them justice should be done them, and, in the mean time, they should reside with us in our habitation. In about five days after, these three vagrants, almost starved with hunger, drew near our grove, and perceiving me, the governor, and two others walking by the side of the creek, they were submissively defired to be received into the family again. We told them of their great incivility to us, and of their unnatural barbarity to their countrymen; but yet we would see what the rest agreed to, and in half an hour's time would bring them word. After some debate, we called them in, where their two countrymen laid a heavy charge against them,

for not only ruining, but designing to murder them, which they could not deny. But here I was forced to interpose as a mediator, by obliging the two Englishmen not to hurt them, being naked and unarmed, and that the other three should make them restitution, by building their two huts, and sencing their ground in the same manner as it was before. Well, being in a miserable condition, they submitted to this at present, and lived some time regularly enough, except as to the working part, which they did not care for, but the Spaniards would have dispensed with that, had they continued easy and quiet. Their arms being given them again, they scarce had them a week when they became as troublesome as ever; but an accident happening soon after, obliged us to lay aside private resentments, and look to our

common preservation.

" One night, Sir, I went to bed, perfectly well in health, and yet by no means could I compose myself to sleep; upon which, being very uneasy, I got up and looked out, but it being dark, I could perceive nothing but the trees around the castle. I went to bed again, but it was all one, I could not fleep; when one of my Spaniards, hearing me walk about, asked who it was up? I answered, "It is I." When I told him the occasion, "Sir," faid he, "fuch things are not to be flighted; for certainly there is some mischief plotting against us." "Where are the Englishmen?" said I. He answered, " In their huts;" for they lay separate from us, Sir, fince the last mutiny. "Well," faid I, " some kind spirit gives this information for advantage. Come, let us go abroad, and see if any things offer to justify our Upon which I and some of my Spaniards went up the mountain, not by the ladder, but through the grove, and then we were struck with a panic fear on seeing a light, as though it were a fire, at a very little distance, and hearing the voices of several men. Hereupon we retreated immediately, and raised the rest of our forces, and made them sensible of the impending danger; but with all my authority, I could not make them stay where they were, so earnest were they to see how things went. Indeed the darkness of the night gave them opportunity enough to view them by the light of the fire undiscovered. As they were in different parties, and straggling over the shore, we were much afraid that they should find out our habitations, and destroy our flocks of goats; to prevent which, we fent immediately an Englishman and two Spaniards to drive

was ing beer then Fric felf hou diffe one iflar enti thei hel be his cei

En da; we the int pla

arn

me co ne be W ac que fo the fo

of the boundary was a

the goats into the valley where the cave lay; or, if there was occasion, into the cave itself: As to ourselves, resuming our native courage and prudent conduct, had we not been divided, we durst venture to attack an hundred of them; but before it was yet light, we resolved to send out Friday's father as a spy, who, immediately stripping himfelf naked, gets among them undiscovered, and in two hours time brings word, that they were two parties of two different nations, who lately having a bloody battle with one another, happened to land by mere chance in the fame island, to devour their miserable prisoners; that they were entirely ignorant of any person's inhabiting here; but rather being filled with rage and fury against one another, he believed, that as foon as day-light appeared, there would be a terrible engagement. Old Friday had scarce ended his relation, when we heard an uncommon noise, and perceived that there was a horrid engagement between the two armies.

"Such was the curiofity of our party, especially the Englishmen, that they would not lye close, tho' Old Friday told them their safety depended upon it; and that if we had patience, we should behold the savages kill one another. However, they used some caution, by going farther into the woods, and placing themselves in a convenient

place to behold the battle.

ch

ole

art

ee

ts,

eit-

h,

r,

ey

m

as.

r,

11

h,

;

t,

3

e

,,

S

f

1

9

Mever could there be a more bloody engagement, or men of more invincible spirits and prudent conduct, according to their way and manner of fighting. It lasted near two hovrs, till the party which was nearest our castle began to decline, and at last to fly from their conquerors. We were undoubtedly put into a great consternation on this account, lest they should run into our grove, and consequently bring us into the like danger. Hereupon we resolved to kill the first that came, to prevent discovery, and that too with our swords, and the butt end of our muskets, for fear the report of our guns should be heard.

"And so indeed, as we thought, it happened; for three of the vanquished army crossing the creek, ran directly to the place, as to a thick wood for shelter; nor was it long before our scout gave us notice of it; as also, that the victors did not think sit to pursue them. Upon this I would not suffer them to be slain, but had them surprised and taken by our party; afterwards they proved very good servants to us, being stout young creatures, and able

hithe

cafe

Anot

of pr

favag

of th

ber (

we k

for u

could

more

plan

pala

up t

cree

leav

ed,

grov

fcar

cien

to t

with

by t

had

And

to

nece

ing

one

me

per

fho

tio

ho

tim

ha

tha

th

T

on

be

hi

to do a great deal of work. The remainder of the conquered favages fled to their canoes, and put out into the ocean, while the conquerors, joining together, shouted by way of triumph, and about three in the afternoon they also embarked for their own nation. Thus we were freed at once from these savages and our sears, not perceiving any of these creatures for some considerable time after. We found two and thirty men dead in the field of battle; some were slain with long arrows, which we sound sticking in their bodies: and the rest were killed with great unweildy wooden swords, which denoted their vast strength, and of which we sound seventeen, besides bows and arrows: but we could not find one wounded creature among them alive; for they either kill their enemies quite, or carry those wounded away with them.

"This terrible fight tamed the Englishmen for some time, confidering how unfortunate they might have been had they fallen into their hands, who would not only kill them as enemies, but also for food, as we do cattle; and indeed so much did this nauseate their stomachs, that it not only made them very fick, but more tractable to the common necessary business of the whole society, planting, sowing, and reaping, with the greatest signs of amity and friendship; so, that being now all good friends, we began to consider of circumstances in general; and the first thing we thought of was, whether, as we perceived the favages haunted that fide of the island, and there being more retired parts of it, and yet as well fuited to our manner of living, and equally to our advantage, we ought not rather to move our place of residence, and plant it in a much safer place, both for the fecurity of our corn and cattle?

rather voted, nemine contradicente, not to remove our ancient castle, and that for this very good reason, that some time or other we expected to hear from our supreme governor, (meaning you, Sir) whose messengers not finding us there, might think the place demolished, and all his subjects destroyed by the savages.

we confented to have them removed to the valley where the cave was, that being most proper and sufficient for both. But yet, when we considered farther, we altered one part of our resolution, which was to remove part of our cattle.

on-

the

by

alfo

ny

We

me

in

dy

of

out

e;:

ofe

ne ·

ad

m.

ed .

ly

n.

3,

;

15

t.

t

,

7 :

e

.

t.

hither, and plant only part of our corn there; fo that in case one part was destroyed, the other might be preserved. Another resolution we took, which really had a great deal of prudence in it; and that was, in not truffing the three favages whom we had taken pisoners, with any knowledge of the plantations we had made in the valley, of what number of cattle we had there, much less of the cave, wherein we kept several arms, and two barrels of powder you left for us at your departure from this island. But though we could not change our habitation, we refolved to make it more fortified and more secret. To this end, Sir, as you ' planted trees at some distance before the entrance of your palace; so we, imitating your example, planted and filled up the whole space of ground, even to the banks of the creek, nay, into the very ooze where the tide flowed, not leaving a place for landing; and among those I had planted, they had intermingled so many short ones, all of which growing wonderfully fast and thick, a little dog could scarcely find a passage through them. Nor was this sufficient, as we thought; for we did the fame to all the ground, to the right and left hand of us, even to the top of the hill, without so much as leaving a passage for ourselves, except by the ladder; which being taken down, nothing but what had wings or witchcraft could pretend to come near us. And indeed this was exceedingly well contrived, especially to serve that occasion, for which we afterwards found it necessary.

Thus we lived two years in a happy retirement, having, all this time, not one visit from the savages. Indeed one morning we had an alarm, which put us in some amazement: for a few of my Spaniards being out very early, perceived no less than twenty canoes, as it were coming on shore: upon which returning home, with great precipitation, they gave us the alarm, which obliged us to keep at home all that day and the next, going out only in the nightime, to make our observations; but, as good luck would have it, they were upon another design, and did not land

that time upon the island.

But now there happened another quarrel between the three wicked Englishmen, and some of my Spaniards.—The occasion was this: One of them being enraged at one of the savages, whom he had taken prisoner, for not being able to comprehend something which he was shewing him, snatched up a hatchet in a great fury, not to correct,

Seig

killi

kill

faid

fucl

fing

to f

he l

ven

lain

don

fav

han

fho

wit

the

my

tio

my

wh

op

an

TO

lec

th

nia

CO

WI

to

or

or

W

W

E

to

fo

b

b

C

2

but to kill him; yet missing his head, gave him such a barbarous cut in the shoulder, that he had like to have ftruck off his arm: at which one of my good-natured Spaniards interposing between the Englishman and the Savage, beseeched the former not to murder the poor creature: but this kindness had like to have cost the Spaniard his life, for the Englishman struck at him in the same manner; which he nimbly and wifely avoiding, returned fuddenly upon him with his shovel, (being all at work about their corn land) and very fairly knocked the brutish creature down. Hereupon, another Englishman coming to his fellow's affistance, laid the good Spaniard on the earth; when immediately two others coming to his relief, were attacked by the third Englishman, armed with an old cutlass, who wounded them both. This uproar foon reached our ears, when we, rushing out upon them, took the three Englishmen prisoners, and then our next question was, what should be done to fuch mutinous and impudent fellows, fo furious, desperate, and idle, that they were mischievous to the highest degree, and consequently not safe for the society to let them live among them.

Now, Sir, as I was governor in your absence, so I also took the authority of a judge; and, having them brought before me, I told them, that if they had been of my country, I would have hanged every mother's son of them; but, since it was an Englishman, (meaning you, kind Sir) to whom we were indebted for our preservation and deliverance, I would, in gratitude, use them with all possible mildness; but, at the same time, leave them to the judgment of the other two Englishmen, who, I hoped, forgetting their resentments, would deal impartially by them.

"Hereupon, one of his countrymen stood up: "Sir," faid he, "leave it not to us, for you may be sensible we have reason to sentence them to the gallows: besides, Sir, this fellow, Will Atkins, and the two others, proposed to us, that we might murder you all in your sleep, which we would not consent to: but, knowing their inability, and your vigilance, we did not think sit to discover it before now."

"How, Seignior," faid I, "do you hear what is alleged against you? What can you say to justify so horrid an action, as to murder us in cold blood?" So far, Sir, was the wretch from denying it, that he swore, d-mn him but he would do it still. "But what have we done to you,

ch a

ave

pa-

ge,

but

ife,

er;

nly

neir

ure fel-

nen

ced

ho

rs,

sh-

uld

us,

he

to

lo ·

ht

ny

n;

r)

le

3-

t-

"

e

r,

0

e

d

Seignior Atkins," faid I, " or what will you gain by killing us? What shall we do to prevent you? Must we kill you, or you kill us? Why will you, Seignior Atkins," faid I, smiling, " put us to such an unhappy dilemma, fuch a fatal necessity?" But so great a rage did my scoffing, and yet fevere jest, put him into, that he was going to fly at me, and undoubtedly had attempted to kill me if he had been possessed of weapons, and had not been prevented by three Spaniards. This unparalleled and villainous carriage, made us feriously consider what was to be The two Englishmen and the Spaniard, who had faved the poor Indian's life, mightily petitioned me to hang one of them, for an example to the others, which should be him that had twice attempted to commit murder with his hatchet, it being at that time thought impossible the poor flave should recover. But they could never gain my confent to put him to death, for the reasons above-mentioned, fince it was an Englishman (even yourself) who was my deliverer: and as merciful counfels are most prevailing, when earnestly pressed, so I got them to be of the same opinion as to clemency. But, to prevent them doing us any farther mischief, we all agreed, that they should have no weapons, as fword, gun, powder, or shot, but be expelled from the society, to live as they pleased by themselves; that neither the two Englishmen, nor the rest of the Spaniards, should have conversation with them upon any account what foever: that they should be kept from coming within a certain distance of our castle; and if they dared to offer us any violence, either by spoiling, burning, killing, or destroying any of the corn, plantings, buildings, fences, or cattle, belonging to the fociety, we would shoot them as freely as we would do beafts of prey, in whatsoever places we should find them.

"This fentence feemed very just to all but themselves; when, like a merciful judge, I called out to the two honest Englishmen, saying, "You must consider they ought not to be starved neither; and since it will be some time before they can raise corn and cattle of their own, let us give them some corn to last them eight months, and for seed to sow, by which time they'll raise some for themselves; let us also bestow upon them six milch goats, sour he ones, and six kids, as well for their present support, as for a further increase; with tools necessary for their work, as hatchets, an ax, saw, and other things convenient to build them huts:

WOU

the

fava

pot

thi

On

wh

ing

ha

th

W

th

ar

er

n

0

T

b

t

all which were agreed: but before they took them into poffession, I obliged them solemnly to swear, never to attempt any thing against us, or their countrymen, for the suture. Thus dismissing them from our society, they went away, sullen and refractory, as though neither willing to go nor stay; however, seeing no remedy, they took what provision was given them, proposing to choose a convenient place,

where they might live by themselves.

About five days after, they came to those limits appointed, in order for more victuals, and sent me word by one of my Spaniards, whom they called to, where they had pitched their tents, and marked themselves out an habitation and plantation, at the N. E. and most remote part of the island. And, indeed, there they built themselves two very handsome cottages, resembling our little castle, being under the side of a mountain, with some trees already growing on three sides of it; so that planting a few more, it would be obscured from sight, unless particularly sought for. When these huts were finished, we gave them some dry goat skins for bedding and covering; and upon their giving us suller assurances of their good behaviour for the suture, we gave them some peas, barley, and rice for sowing, and whatever tools we could spare.

Six months did they live in this separate condition, in which they got their first harvest in, the quantity of which was but small, because they had planted but little land: for, indeed, all their plantations being to form, made it more dissicult, especially as it was a thing out of their element; and when they were obliged to make their boards and pots, &c. they could make little or nothing of it. But the rainy season coming on, put them into a greater perplexity for want of a cave to keep their corn dry, and prevent it from spoiling: and so much did this humble them, that they begged of my Spaniards to help them, to which the good-natured men readily consented, and in four days space, worked a great hole in the side of the hill for them, large enough for their purpose, to secure their corn and other things from the rain, though not comparable to ours,

which had feveral additional apartments.

"But a new whim possessed these rogues about three quarters of a year after, which had like to have ruined us, and themselves too: for, it seems, being tired and weary of this sort of living, which made them work for themselves, without hopes of changing their condition, nothing

would serve them, but that they would make a voyage to the continent, and try if they could seize upon some of the savages, and bring them over as slaves, to do their drud-

gery, while they lived at ease and pleasure.

pt

e.

73

r

Indeed the project was not so preposterous, if they had not gone farther; but they neither did, nor proposed any thing, but what had mischief in the design, or the event. One morning, these three fellows came down to the limited flation, and humbly defired to be admitted to talk with us, which we readily granted; they told us, in short, that being tired of their manner of living, and the labour of their hands in fuch employments, not being sufficient to procure the necessaries of life, they only defired one of the canoes we came over in, with some arms and ammunition for their defence, and they would feek their fortunes abroad, and never trouble us any more. To be fure, we were glad enough to get rid of fuch wretched plagues; but yet honesty made us ingenuously represent to them, by what we ourselves had suffered, the certain destruction they were running into, either of being starved to death or murdered by the favages. To this they very audaciously replied, that they neither could nor would work; and confequently that they might as well be starved abroad as at home; and as to their falling into the hands of the favages, why, if they were murdered, that was nothing to us, there was an end of them; neither had they any wives or children to cry after them; nay, fo intent were they upon their voyage, that if the Spaniards had not given them arms, fo they had but the canoe they would have gone without

"Though we could not well spare our fire-arms, rather than they should go like naked men, we let them have two muskets, a pistol, a cutlass, and three hatchets, which were thought very sufficient; we gave them also goats shesh, a great basket sull of dried grapes, a pot of fresh butter, a young live kid, and a large canoe sufficient to carry twenty men. And thus, with a mast made of a long pole, and a sail of six large goat skins dried, having a fair breeze, and a shood tide with them, they merrily sailed away, the Spaniards calling after them, Bon veyajo, no man ever expecting to see them more.

"When they were gone, the Spaniards and Englishmen would often fay to one another, "O how peaceably do we now live, fince those turbulent fellows have left us!"

felv

tak

hac

ago

at t

we

we

oth

for

po

me

mo

we

ele

OX

at

to

of

kr

ce

ha

bu

ye

po

th

th

de

ta

n

a

P

Nothing could be farther from their thoughts than to behold their faces any more; and yet scarce two and twenty days had passed over their heads, but one of the Englishmen, being abroad a planting, perceived, at a distance, three men, well armed, approaching towards him. he flies with speed to our castle, and tells me and the rest, that we were all undone, for that strangers were landed upon the island, and who they were he could not tell; but added that they were not favages, but men habited, bearing arms. Why then, faid I, we have the less occasion to be concerned, fince, if they are not Indians, they must be friends; for I am sure there is no Christian people upon earth, but what will do us good rather than harm. But while we were confidering of the event, up came the three Englishmen, whose voices we quickly knew, and so all our admiration of that nature ceased at once. And our wonder was succeeded by another fort of inquiry, which was, what could be the occasion of their returning so quickly to the island, when we little expected, and much less defired their company? But as this was better to be related by themselves, I ordered them to be brought in, when they gave me the following relation of their voyage.

" After two days fail, or fomething less, they reached land, where they found the people coming to give them another fort of reception than what they expected or defired: for, as the favages were armed with bows and arrows, they durst not venture on shore, but seered northward, fix or feven hours, till they gained an opening, by which they plainly perceived, that the land that appeared from this place, was not the main land, but an island. At their entrance into the opening of the sea, they discovered another island, on the right hand northward, and several more lying to the westward; but being resolved to go on shore some where or other, they put over to one of the western islands. Here they found the natives very courteous to them, giving them several roots and dried fish: nay, even their women too were as willing to supply them with what they could procure them to eat, bringing it a great way to them upon their heads. Among these hospitable Indians they continued some days, inquiring by signs and tokens, what nations lay around them; and were informed, that there were several sierce and terrible people lived every way, accustomed to eat mankind: but for them10-

nty

n-

ce,

ay

ft,

ed

ut

r-

on

ıst

on

ut

ee

ır

-

s,

0

d

y

felves they never used such diet, except those that were taken in battle, and of them they made a solemn feast.

"The Englishmen inquired how long it was fince they had a feast of that kind? They answered, about two moons ago, pointing to the moon; and then two fingers; that, at this time, their king had two hundred prisoners, which were fattening up for the slaughter. The Englishmen were mighty defirous of feeing the prisoners, which the others mistaking, thought that they wanted some of them for their own food: upon which they beckoned to them, pointing to the rifing, and then to the fetting of the fun: meaning, that by the time it appeared in the east next morning, they would bring them some: and indeed they were as good as their word; for by that time they brought eleven men and five women, just as so many cows and oxen are brought to sea-port towns, to victual a ship. as brutish as these Englishmen were, their stomachs turned at the fight. What to do in this case, they could not tell: to refuse the prisoners, would have been the highest affront offered to the favage gentry; and to dispose of them, they knew not in what manner: however, they resolved to accept them, and so gave them, in return, one of their hatchets, an old key, a knife, and fix or feven of their bullets; things which, tho' they were wholly ignorant of, yet they seemed entirely contented with; and dragging the poor wretches into the boat, with their hands bound behind them, delivered them to the Englishmen. But this obliged them to put off as foon as they had these presents, lest the donors should have expected two or three of them to be killed, and to be invited to dinner the next day: and fo taking leave with all possible respect and thanks, though neither of them understood what the others said, they sailed away back to the first island, and there set eight of the prisoners at liberty. In their voyage they endeavoured to comfort, and have some conversation with the poor captives; but it was impossible to make them sensible of any thing; and nothing they could fay or give, or do for them, could make them otherwise persuaded, but that they were unbound only to be devoured: if they gave them any food, they thought it was only to fatten them for the flaughter; or looked at any one more particularly, the poor creature supposed itself to be the first sacrifice; and even when we brought them to our island, and began to

use them with the greatest humanity and kindness, yet they expected every day that their new masters would devour them.

tim

kir

tin

Bu

it I

me

th

1

fo

y

fo

n

clude their unaccountable relation of their voyage, which was both amazing and entertaining. Hereupon, I asked them, where their new family was? They told me, they had put them into one of their huts, and they came to beg fome victuals for them. This, indeed, made us all long to see them; and taking Friday's father with us, leaving only two at our castle, we came down to behold these poor creatures.

When we arrived at the hut, (they being bound again by the Englishmen, for fear of escaping) we found them stark naked, expecting their fatal tragedy; there were three lusty men, well shaped, with straight and good limbs, between thirty and sive and thirty years old; and sive women, two of them might be from thirty to forty, two more not above four and twenty; and the last, a comely tall maiden of about seventeen. Indeed, all the women were very agreeable, both in proportion and seatures, except that they were tawny, which their modest behaviour, and other graces, made amends for, when they afterwards

came to be clothed.

"This naked appearance, together with their miserable circumstances, was no very comfortable fight to my Spaniards, who, for their parts, I may venture, Sir, without flattery, to fay, are men of the best behaviour, calmest tempers, and sweetest nature, that can possibly be; for they immediately ordered Friday's father to see if he knew any of them, or if he understood what they could fay. No fooner did the old Indian appear, but he looked at them with great feriousness; yet, as they were not of his nation, they were utter strangers to him, and none could understand his speech or signs, but one woman. This was enough to answer the design, which was to assure them they would not be killed, being fallen into the hands of Christians, who abhorred such barbarity. When they were fully fatisfied of this, they expressed their joy by such strange gestures, and uncommon tones, as it is not possible for me to describe. But the woman, their interpreter, was ordered next to inquire, whether they were content to be fervants, and would work for the men who had brought them hither to fave their lives? Hereupon, (being at this

hey

our

on-

iich

ked

hey

beg

ong

ing

700

ain

em

ere

os,

0-

re

all

re

ot

d

ls

e

time unbound) they fell a capering and dancing, one taking this thing upon her shoulders, and the other that, intimating, that they were willing to do any thing for them. But now, Sir, having women among us, and dreading that it might occasion some strife, if not blood, I asked the three men what they would do, and how they intended to use these creatures, whether as servants or women? One of them very pertly and readily answered, they would use them Gentlemen, said I, as you are your own masters, I am not going to restrain you from that; but, methinks for avoiding diffentions among you, I would only defire you to engage, that none of you will take more than one for a woman or wife, and that having taken this one, none elle should presume to touch her; for though we have not a prieftly authority to marry you, yet it is but reasonable, that whoever thus takes a woman, should be obliged to maintain her: fince nobody has any thing to do with her: and this, indeed, appeared so just to all present, that it was unanimously agreed to. The Englishmen then asked my Spaniards, whether they defigned to take any of them? but they all answered, No; some declaring they had already wives in Spain: and others that they cared not to join with On the reverse, the Englishmen took each of them a temporary wife, and fo fet up a new method of living. As to Friday's father, the Spaniards, and the three lavage servants we had taken in the late battle, they all lived with me in our ancient castle; and indeed we supplied the main part of the island with food, as necessity required. But the most remarkable part of the story is, how these Englishmen, who had been so much at variance, should agree about the choice of those women; yet they took a way good enough to prevent quarrelling among themselves. They set the five women in one of their huts, and going themselves to the other, drew lots which should have the first choice. Now, he that had the first lot went to the hut, and fetched out her he chose, and it is remarkable, that he took her that was the most homely and eldest of the number, which made the rest of the Englishmen exceedingly merry; the Spaniards themselves could not but smile at it; but, as it happened, the fellow had the best thought, in choosing one sit for application and business; and indeed the proved the best wife of all the parcel.

But when the poor creatures perceived themselves placed in a row, and separated one by one, they were again seized

chie

or t

mu

Kir

In

hec

go

no

be

in

W

W

d

with an unspeakable terror, as now thinking they were going to be slain in earnest: and when the Englishmen came to take the first, the rest set up a lamentable cry, clasped their arms around her neck, and hanging about her, took their last farewel, as they thought, in such trembling agonies, and affectionate embraces, as would have softened the hardest heart in the world, and made the driest eyes melt into tears; nor could they be persuaded but that they were going to die, till such time as Friday's father made them sensible that the Englishmen had chosen them for their wives, which ended all their terror and concern

upon this occasion.

"Well, after this, the Englishmen went to work, and being assisted by my good-natured Spaniards, in a few hours they erected every one of them a new hut or tent for their separate lodging, since those they had already were filled with tools, household stuff, and provision. They all continued on the north shore of the island, but separate as before; the three wicked ones pitching farther off, and the two honest men nearer our castle; so that the island seemed to be peopled in three places, three towns beginning to be built for that purpose. And here I cannot but remark, what is very common, that the two honest men had the worst wives, (I mean as to industry, cleanliness, and ingenuity) while the three reprobates enjoyed women of quite

contrary qualities.

"But another observation I made was, in favour of the two honest men, to shew what disparity there is between a diligent application to business, on the one hand, and a flothful, negligent, and idle temper, on the other. Both of them had the same parcel of ground laid out, and corn to fow, sufficient for them; but both did not make the same improvements, either in their cultivation or in their plant-The two honest men had a multitude of young trees planted about their habitations, fo that when you approached near them, nothing appeared but a wood, very pleafing and delightful. Every thing they did prospered and flourished; their grapes, planted in order, seemed as though managed in a vineyard, and were infinitely preferable to any of the others. Nor were they wanting to find out a place of retreat, but dug a cave in the most retired part of a thick wood, to fecure their wives and children, with their provision and chiefest goods, surrounded with innumerable stakes, and having a most subtle entrance, in case any mischief should happen, either from their fellow countrymen,

or the devouring favages.

rere

nen ry,

out

mave

iest

hat

her

em

rn

nd

rs

ır

d

e

" As to the reprobates, (though I must own they were much more civilized than before) instead of a delightful wood furrounding their dwellings, we found the words of King Solomon too truly verified; " I went by the vineyard " of the flothful, and it was all overgrown with thorns." In many places their crop was obscured by weeds; the hedges having several gaps in them, the wild goats had got in, and eaten up the corn, and here and there was a dead bush, to stop these gaps for the present, which was no more than shutting the stable door after the steed was stolen away. But as to their wives, they (as I observed before) were more diligent, and cleanly enough, especially in their victuals, being instructed by one of the honest men, who had been a cook's mate on board a ship: and very well it was fo; for as he cooked himself, his companion and their families lived as well as the idle husbands, who did nothing but loiter about, fetch turtle's eggs, catch fish and birds, and do any thing but work, and lived accordingly; while the diligent lived very handsomely and plentifully, in the most comfortable manner.

"And now, Sir, I come to lay before your eyes a scene quite different from any thing that ever happened to us before, and perhaps ever befel you in all the time of your residence on this island. I shall inform you of its original

in the following manner:

"One morning, Sir, very early, there came five or fix canoes of Indians on shore, indisputably upon their old custom of devouring their prisoners. All that we had to do upon such an occasion, was to lie concealed, that they, not having any notice of inhabitants, might depart quietly, after performing their bloody execution: whoever first difcovered the favages, was to give notice to all the three plantations to keep within doors, and then a proper fcout was to be placed to give intelligence of their departure. But, notwithstanding these wise measures, an unhappy difafter discovered us to the savages, which was like to have caused the desolation of the whole island; for, after the savages were gone off in their canoes, some of my Spaniards and I looking abroad, and being inflamed with a curiofity to see what they had been doing, to our great amazement beheld three favages fast asleep on the ground, who, either being gorged, could not awake when the others went off.

H4

or having wandered too far into the woods, did not come back in time.

froi

hac

10

and

Ar

ce

wh

br

le

th

th

"What to do with them at first, we could not tell; as for slaves we had enough of them already; and as to killing them, neither Christianity nor humanity would suffer us to shed the blood of persons who never did us wrong. We perceived they had no boat left them to transport them to their own nation; and that, by letting them wander about, they might discover us, and inform the first savages that should happen to land upon the same bloody occasion, which information might entirely ruin us; and therefore I counselled my Spaniards to secure them, and set them about some work or other, till we could better dispose of them.

"Hereupon we all went back, and making them awake, took them prisoners. It is impossible to express the horror they were in, especially when bound, as thinking they were going to be murdered and eaten, but we soon eased them of their sear as to that point. We first took them to the bower, where the chief of our country work lay, as keeping goats, planting corn, &c. and then carried them to the two Englishmen's habitation, to help them in their business; but happy it was for us all we did not carry them to our castle, as by the sequel will appear. The Englishmen, indeed, found them work to do; but whether they did not guard them strictly, or that they thought they could not better themselves, I cannot tell; but certainly one of them ran away into the woods, and they could not hear of him for a long time after.

Undoubtedly there was reason enough to suppose he got home in some of the canoes, the savages returning in about four weeks time, and going off in the space of two days. You may be certain, Sir, this thought could not but terrify us exceedingly, and make us justly conclude, that the savage would inform his countrymen of our abode in the island, how sew and weak we were in comparison to their numbers; and we expected it would not be long before the Englishmen would be attacked in their habitations: but the savages had not seen their places of safety in the woods, nor our castle, which it was a great happiness they did not know.

Nor were we mistaken in our thoughts upon this occasion; for, about eight months after this, six canoes, with about ten men in each canoe, came sailing by the northside of the island, which they were never accustomed to do

before, and landed about an hour after funrise, near a mile from the dwelling of the two Englishmen, who, it seems, had the good fortune to discover them about a league off: fo that it was an hour before they could attain the shore, and fome time longer before they could come at them. And now being confirmed in this opinion, that they were certainly betrayed, they immediately bound the two flaves which were left, caufing two of the three men, whom they brought with the women, and who proved very faithful, to lead them with their wives, and other conveniences, into their retired cave in the wood, and there to bind the two fellows hand and foot, till they had further orders. then opened their fences, where they kept their milch goats, and drove them all out, giving the goats liberty to ramble in the woods, to make the favages believe that they were wild ones; but the flave had given a truer information, which made them come to the very inclosures. The two frighted men fent the other flave of the three, who had been with them by accident, to alarm the Spaniards, and defire their affistance; in the mean time they took their arms and ammunition, and made to the cave where they had fent their wives, and fecuring their flaves, feated themselves in a private place, from whence they might behold all the actions of the favages. Nor had they gone far, when ascending a rising ground, they could see a little army of Indians approach to their beautiful dwelling, and in a few moments more, perceive the same, and their furniture, to their unspeakable grief, burning in a consuming flame: and when this was done, they spread here and there, searching every bush and place for the people, of whom, it was very evident, they had information. Upon which the two Englishmen, not thinking themselves secure where they stood, retreated about half a mile higher in the country, rightly concluding, that the farther the favages strolled, there would be less numbers together: upon which they next took their stand by the trunk of an old tree, very hollow and large, whence they refolved to fee what would offer; but they had not stood long there, before two savages came running directly towards them, as though, having knowledge of their being there, who feemed resolved to attack them; a little farther were three more, and fivemore behind them again, all running the same way. cannot be imagined what perplexity the poor men were in at this fight, thinking that if affiftance did not speedily

H 5

ome

; as killlffer

ng.

hat

ich un-

out

e,

or

m

ne

e

0

come, their cave in the wood would be discovered, and confequently all therein loft: fo they resolved to refist them. there, and, when overpowered, to ascend to the top of the trees, where they might defend themselves as long as their ammunition lasted, and fell their lives as dear as possible to those devouring savages. Thus fixed in their resolution, they next confidered, whether they should fire at the first two, or wait for the three, and fo take the middle party, by which the two first and the five last would be separated. In this regulation the two favages also confirmed them, by turning a little to another part of the wood; but the three, and the five after them, came directly towards the tree. Hereupon they resolved to take them in a direct line, as they approached nearer, because perhaps the first shot might hit them all three: and upon this occasion, the man who was to fire, charged his piece with three or four bul-And thus while they were waiting, the favages came on, one of them was the runaway, who had caused all the mischief: so they resolved he should not escape, if they both fired at once. But, however, though they did not fire together, they were ready charged; when the first that let fly, was too good a marksman to miss his aim; for he killed the foremost outright, the second (who was the runaway Indian) fell to the ground, being shot through the body, but not dead, and the third was a little wounded in the shoulder, who, sitting down on the ground, fell a screaming in a most fearful manner. The noise of the guns, which not only made the most resounding echoes, from one fide to the other, but raised the birds of all forts, fluttering with the most confused noise, so much terrified the five favages behind, that they flood still at first, like so many inanimate images. But when all things were in profound filence, they came to the place where their companions lay: and here, not being fenfible that they were liable to the same fate, slood over the wounded man, undoubtedly inquiring the occasion of this sad calamity; and 'tis as reasonable to suppose, he told them, that it came by thunder and lightening from the gods, having never feen or heard of a gun before, in the whole course of their lives. By this time the Englishmen, having loaded their pieces, fired both together a second time, when seeing them all fall immediately on the ground, they thought they had killed every creature of them. This made them come up boldly before they had charged their guns, which, indeed, was a

Wron four at a muf hea arm the and the to 100 wi ch be CC th nd

m

he

eir

to

n,

rst

y,

d.

y

2,

3

t

wrong step; for, when they came to the place, they found four alive, two of them very little wounded, and one not at all, which obliged them to fall upon them with their muskets; they first knocked the runaway savage on the head, and another that was but a little wounded in the arm, and then put the other languishing wretches out of their pain; while he that was not hurt, with bended knees and uplifted hands, made piteous moans, and figns to them to spare his life; nor, indeed, were they unmerciful to the poor wretch, but pointed to him to fit down at the root of a tree hard by; and then, one of the Englishmen, with a piece of rope twine he had in his pocket, by mere chance, tying his two feet fast together, and his two hands behind him, they left him there, making all the haste they could after the other two, fearing they should find out their cave; but though they could not overtake them, they had the fatisfaction to perceive them at a distance, cross a valley towards the fea, a quite contrary way to their retreat; upon which they returned to the tree, to look after their prisoner; but when they came there, he was gone, leaving the pieces of rope-yarn, wherewith he was bound, behind him.

"Well, now they were as much concerned as ever, as not knowing how near their enemies might be, or in what numbers. Immediately they repaired to the cave, to fee if all was well there, and found every thing fafe, except the women, who were frighted upon their husbands ac-They had not count, whom they now loved entirely. been long here, before seven of my Spaniards came to affift them: while the other ten, their fervants, and Friday's father, were gone to defend their bower, corn, and cattle, in case the savages should have rambled so far. There accompanied the seven Spaniards, one of the three favages that had formerly been taken prisoner; and with them also, that very Indian whom the Englishmen had, a little before, left under the tree; for it feems, they paffed by that way where the slaughter was made, and so carried along with them that poor weetch that was left bound. But fo many prisoners now becoming a burthen to us, and fearing the dreadful consequence of their escaping, most of the Spaniards and English urged the absolute necessity there was of killing them for our common preservation: but, Sir, the authority I bore, as a governor, over-ruled that piece of cruelty; and then I ordered them to be fent pri-

H 6

foners to the old cave in the valley, bound hands and feet,

men

to e

wit

pro

hu

the

to of

al

ex

In

b

with two Spaniards to guard them.

"So much encouraged were the Englishmen at the approach of the Spaniards, and so great was their fury against the favages for destroying their habitations, that they had not patience to stay any longer; but, taking five Spaniards along with them, armed with four muskets, a pistol, and a quarter-staff, away they went in pursuit of their enemies. As they passed by the place where the savages were slain, it was very easy to be perceived that more of them had been there, having attempted to carry off their dead bodies, but found it impracticable. From a rifing ground, our party had the mortification to fee the smoke that proceeded from the ruins; when coming farther in fight of the shore, they plainly perceived that the savages had embarked in their candes, and were putting out to sea. they were very forry for, there being no coming at them to give them a parting falute; but however, they were glad enough to get clear of fuch unwelcome guetts.

Thus the two honest, but unfortunate Englishmen, being rained a second time, and their improvements quite destroyed, most of my good-natured Spaniards helped them to rebuild, and we all assisted them with needful supplies: nay, what is more remarkable, their three mischievous countrymen, when they heard of it, (which was after all these disasters were over, they living remote eastward) very friendly sympathised with them, and worked for them several days; so that, in a little, their habitation was rebuilt, their necessities supplied, and themselves restored to their

former tranquillity.

"Though the favages had nothing to boast of in this adventure, (several canoes being driven ashore, followed by two drowned creatures, having undoubtedly met with a storm at sea that very night they departed) yet it was natural to be supposed, that those whose better fortune it was to attain their native shore, would instame their nation to another ruinous attempt, with a greater force, to carry all before them. And, indeed, so it happened; for about seven months after, our island was invaded with a most formidable navy, no less than eight and twenty canoes full of savages, armed with wooden swords, monstrous clubs, bows and arrows, and such like instruments of war, landing at the east-side of the island.

"You may well, Sir, imagine, what conflernation our men were in upon this account, and how speedy they were to execute their resolution, having only that night's time They knew, that fince they could not allowed them. withstand their enemies, concealment was the only way to procure their fafety; and, therefore, they took down the huts that were built for the two Englishmen, and drove their flock of goats, together with their own at the bower, to the old cave in the valley, leaving as little appearance of inhabitants as possible; and then posted themselves, with all their force, at the plantation of the two men. As they expected, so it happened; for early the next morning, the Indians, leaving their canoes at the east-end of the island, came running along the shore, about two hundred and fifty in number, as near as could be gueffed. Our army was but little indeed; and what was our greatest misfortune, we had not arms sufficient for them. The account, as to the men, Sir, is as follows: viz. 17 Spaniards, 5 Englishmen, Old Friday, the three favages, taken with the women, who proved faithful fervants, and three other flaves, living with the Spaniards.—To arm these, they had 11 muskets, 5 pistols, 3 fowling-pieces, 2 swords, 3 old halberts, 5 mulkets, or fowling-pieces, taken from the failors whom you reduced. As to the flaves, we gave three of them halberts, and the other three long staves, with great iron spikes at the end of them, with hatchets by their sides; we also had hatchets sticking in our girdles, besides the fire-arms: nay, two of the women, inspired with Amazonian fortitude, could not be disfuaded from fighting along with their dearest husbands, and if they died, to die with Seeing their resolution, we gave them hatchets likewise; but what pleased them best, were the bows and arrows (which they dexteroufly knew how to use) that the

"Over this army, which, though little, was of great intrepidity I was constituted chief general and commander; and knowing Will Atkins, though exceeding wicked, yet a man of invincible courage, I gave him the power of commanding under me; he had fix men with their muskets loaded, with fix or seven bullets a-piece, and were planted just behind a small thicket of bushes, as an advanced guard, having orders to let the first pass by; and then, when he fired into the middle of them, making a nimble retreat

Indians had left behind them, after their memorable battle

eet,

apinft
had
rds
d a
ies.
in,

ad 0d,

of iis n

d

round a part of the wood, and fo come in the rear of the Spaniards, who were shaded by a thicket of trees: for though the favages came on with the fierceness of lions, yet they wanted the subtilty of foxes, being out of all manner of order, and straggling in heaps every way; and, indeed, when Will Atkins, after fifty of the savages had passed by, had ordered three of his men to give fire, so great was their consternation, to see so many men killed and wounded, and hear fuch a dreadful noise, and yet not know whence it came, that they were frightened to the highest degree; and when the fecond volley was given, they concluded no less but that their companions were flain by thunder and lightning from Heaven. In this notion they would have continued, had Will Atkins and his men retired, as foon as they fired, according to order: or had the rest been near them, to pour in their shot continually, there might have been a complete victory obtained; but staying to load their pieces again, discovered the whole matter. They were perceived by fome of the scattering savages at a distance, who let fly their arrows among them, wounded Atkins himfelf, and killed his fellow Englishman, and one of the Indians taken with the women. Our party did not fail to answer them, and in their retreat killed about twenty savages. Here I cannot but take notice of our poor dying flave, who, tho' stopt from his retreat by a fatal arrow, yet with his staff and hatchet, desperately and gallantly assailed his pursuers, and killed five of the savages, before his life. fubmitted to a multiplicity of wounds. Nor is the cruelty or malice of the Indians to be less remarked, in breaking the arms, legs, and heads of the two dead bodies, with their clubs and wooden fwords, after a most wretched manner. As Atkins retreated our party advanced, to interpose between him and the favages; but, after three vollies, we were obliged to retreat also; for they were so numerous and desperate, that they came up to our very teeth, shot their arrows like a cloud, and their wounded men, enraged with cruel pain, fought like madmen. They did not, however, think fit to follow us, but drawing themselves up in a circle, they gave two triumphant shouts in token of victory, tho' they had the grief to see several of their wounded men bleed to death before them.

After I had, Sir, drawn up our little army together upon a rifing ground, Atkins, wounded as he was, would have had us attack the whole body of the favages at once.

I wa but, " ni " al " al whi

> Atland mo nie

> > the

me

a t

to vo

f

I was extremely well pleased with the gallantry of the man: but, upon consideration, I replied, "You perceive, Seig"nior Atkins, how their wounded men sight; let them
"alone till morning, when they will be faint, stiff, and sore,
"and then we shall have fewer to combat with." To
which Atkins, smiling, replied, "That's very true, Seig"nior, so shall I too; and that's the reason I would sight
"them now I am warm." We all answered, Seignior
Atkins, for your part, you have behaved very gallantly;
and, if you are not able to approach the enemy in the
morning, we will sight for you, till then we think it conve-

nient to wait, and fo we tarried.

br

35

r

,

,

r

d

t

1

3

.

.

..

" By the brightness of the moon that night, we perceived the favages in great disorder about their dead and wounded This made us change our resolution, and resolve to fall upon them in the night, if we could give them one volley undiscovered. This we had a fair opportunity to do, by one of the two Englishmen leading us round, between the woods and the fea-fide westward, and turning short fouth, came privately to a place where the thickest of them were. Unheard and unperceived, eight of us fired among them, and did dreadful execution; and in half a minute after, eight more of us let fly, killing and wounding abundance of them; and then dividing ourselves into three bodies, eight persons in each body, we marched from among the trees, to the very teeth of the enemy, fending forth the greatest shouts and acclamations. lavages hearing a different noise from three quarters at once, stood in the utmost confusion; but coming in fight of us, let fly a volley of arrows, which wounded poor old Friday, yet happily it did not prove mortal. We did not, however, give them a second opportunity; but rushing in among them, we fired three several ways, and then fell to work with our fwords, staves, hatchets, and the butt-end of our muskets, with a fury not to be resisted; so that, with the most dismal screaming and howling, they had recourse to their feet, to fave their lives by a speedy flight. must we forget the valour of the two women; for they exposed themselves to the greatest dangers, killed many with their arrows, and valiantly destroyed several more with their hatchets.

"In fighting these two battles, we were so much tired, that we did not then trouble ourselves to pursue them to their canoes, in which we thought they would presently

u fr

gum

thou

tirel

feas ing

and

koa

can

we:

tra

the

th

th

m

fa

ti

t

put to the ocean; but their happening a dreadful fform at fea, which continuing 'I that night,' it not only prevented their voyage, but dashed several of their boats to pieces against the beach, and drove the rest so high upon the shore, that it required infinite pains to get them off. After our men had taken some refreshment and a little repose, they resolved early in the morning to go towards the place of their landing, and fee whether they were gone off, or in what posture they remained. This necessarily led them to the place of battle, where several of the savages were expiring, a fight no way pleafing to generous minds, to delight in mifery, though obliged to conquer them by the law of arms; but our own Indian flaves put them out of their pain, by despatching them with their hatchets. At length, coming in view of the remainder of the army, we found them leaning upon their knees, which were bended towards their mouth, and the head between the two hands. Hereupon, coming within musket shot of them, I ordered two pieces to be fired without ball, in order to alarm them, that we might plainly know, whether they had the courage to venture another battle, or were utterly dispirited from fuch an attempt, that so we might accordingly manage them. And, indeed, the project took very well; for, no fooner did the favages hear the first gun, and perceive the flash of the second, but they suddenly started upon their feet, in the greatest consternation; and when we approached towards them, they ran howling and screaming away up the hill into the country.

"We could rather, at first, have wished, that the weather had permitted them to have gone off to the sea; but when we considered, that their escape might occasion the approach of multitudes, to our utter ruin and dissolution, we were very well pleased the contrary happened: and Will Atkins (who, though wounded, would not part from us all this white) advised us not to let slip this advantage, but clapping between them and their boats, deprive them of the capacity of ever returning to plague the island:

"I know," said he, "there is but one objection you can the make which is that these greatures living like heads.

make, which is, that these creatures, living like beasts in the wood, may make excursions, rise the plantations,

and destroy the tame goats; but then, consider, we had better to do with an hundred men, whom we can kill,

or make flaves of at leifure, than with an hundred na-

m at

nted

eces

the

fter

ofe,

ace

rin

em

ere

to

he

of

At

ve

ed

S.

d

1,

e

n

e

from, much less subdue." This advice, and these arguments being approved of, we set fire to their boats; and though they were so wet that we could not burn them entirely, yet we made them incapable for swimming in the seas. As soon as the Indians perceived what we were doing, many of them ran out of the woods, in sight of us, and kneeling down, piteously cried out, Oa, Oa, Waramakoa, intimating, I suppose, that, if we would but spare their canoes, they would never trouble us again.

"But all their complaints, submissions, and entreaties, were in vain; for felf-prefervation obliging us to the contrary, we destroyed every one of them that had escaped the fary of the ocean. When the Indians perceived this, they raised a lamentable cry, and ran into the woods, where they continued ranging about, making the woods ring with their lamentation. Here we should have considered, that making these creatures thus desperate, we ought, at the fame time, to have fet a sufficient guard upon the plantations: for the favages, in their ranging about, found out the bower, destroyed the fences, trod the corn down under their feet, and tore up the vines and grapes. It is true, we were always able to fight these creatures; but, as they were too swift for us, and very numerous, we durst not go out fingle, for fear of them; though that too was needless, they having no weapons, nor any materials to make them; and, indeed, their extremity appeared in a little time after.

"Though the favages, as already mentioned, had destroyed our bower, and all our corn, grapes, &c. yet we had still left our stock of cattle in the valley, by the cave; with some little corn that grew there, and the plantation of Will Atkins and his companions, one of whom being killed with an arrow, they were now reduced to two: it is remarkable that this was the fellow who cut the poor Indian with his hatchet, and had a defign to murder me and my countrymen the Spaniards. As our condition was so low. we came to the resolution to drive the savages up to the farther part of the island, where no Indians landed; to kill as many of them as we could, till we had reduced their number; and then to give the remainder some corn to plant, and to teach them how to live by their daily labour. Accordingly we pursued them with our guns, at the hearing of which they were fo terrified, that they should fall to the ground. Every day we killed and wounded some of them, and many were found starved to death, so that our hearts began to relent at the sight of such miserable objects. At last, with great disticulty, taking one of them alive, and using him with kindness and tenderness, we brought him to old Friday, who talked to him, and told him, how good we would be to them all, giving them corn and land to plant and live in, and present nourishment, provided they should keep within such bounds as should be allotted them, and not do prejudice to others: "Go then," said he, "and inform your countrymen of this; which, if they will not agree to, every one of them shall be said slain."

"The poor creatures, thoroughly humbled, being reduced to about thirty-seven, joyfully accepted the offer, and earnestly begged for food; hereupon we fent twelve Spaniards and two Englishmen, well armed, together with old Friday, and three Indian flaves were loaded with a large quantity of bread and rice cakes, with three live goats: and the poor Indians being ordered to fit down on the fide of the hill, they ate the victuals very thankfully, and have proved faithful to the last, never trespassing beyond their bounds, where, at this day, they quietly and happily remain, and where we now and then vifit them. They are confined to a neck of land about a mile and a half broad, and three or four in length, on the fouth-east corner of the island, the sea being before, and lofty mountains behind them, free from the appearance of canoes: and indeed their countrymen never made any inquiry after them. We gave them twelve hatchets, and three or four knives; have taught them to build huts, make wooden spades, plant corn, make bread, breed tame goats, and milk them, as likewise to make wicker work, in which I must ingenuously confess; they infinitely outdo us, having made themselves several pretty necessaries and fancies, as baskets, sieves, bird cages, and cup-boards, as also stools, beds, and couches, no less useful than delightful; and now they live the most innocent and inoffensive creatures that ever were subdued in the world, wanting nothing but wives to make them a nation.

"Thus, kind Sir, have I given you, according to my ability, an impartial account of the various transactions that have happened in the island since your departure, to this day; and we have great reason to acknowledge the kind providence of Heaven in our merciful deliverance.

Who fom fubj was vifil ver

> lati lefs hea cef fci no

> > th fe a d k a h

pr

t our obthem we told corn ent, d be

reand
paold
ge
ts:
de
ve

re l, e d

e-

When you inspect your little kingdom, you will find in it some little improvement, your slocks increased, and your subjects augmented: so that from a desolate island, as this was before your wonderful deliverance upon it, here is a visible prospect of its becoming a populous and well governed little kingdom, to your immortal same and glory."

There is no doubt to suppose but that the preceding relation of my faithful Spaniard was very agreeable, and no less surprising to me, to the young priest, and to all who heard it: nor were these people less pleased with those necessary utensils that I brought them, such as the knives, scissars, spades, shovels, and pickaxes, with which they

now adorn their habitations.

So much had they addicted themselves to wicker-work, prompted by the ingenuity of the Indians, who affifted them, that when I viewed the Englishmen's colonies, they feemed at a distance as though they had lived like bees in a hive: for Will Atkins, who was now become a very industrious and sober man, had made himself a tent of basket-work round the outside; the walls were worked in as a balket, in pannels or throng squares of thirty-two in number, standing about seven feet high: in the middle was another, not above twenty-two paces round, but much stronger built, being of an octagonal form, and in the eight corners stood eight strong posts, round the top of which he laid strong pieces, pinned with wooden pins, from which he raised a pyramid for the roof, mighty pretty, I assure you, and joined very well together with iron spikes, which he made himself; for he had made him a forge, with a pair of wooden bellows and charcoal for his work, forming an anvil out of one of the iron crows, to work upon, and in this manner would he make himself hooks, staples, spikes, bolts, and hinges. After he had pitched the roof of his innermost tent, he made it so firm between the rafters with basket-work, thatching that over again with rice-straw, and over that a large leaf of a tree, that his house was as dry as if it had been tiled or flated. outer circuit was covered as a lean-to quite round this inner apartment, laying long rafters from the thirty-two angles to the top posts of the inner house, about twenty feet distant: so that there was a space like a wall between the outer and inner wall, near twenty feet in breadth. The inner place he partitioned off with the same wicker-work, dividing it in-

infin

had,

of a

and

the

WOU

her

tive

the

for

live

ve

far

th

ba

W

be

b

to fix neat apartments, every one of which had a door, first into the entry of the main tent, and another into the space and walk that was round it, not only convenient for retreat, but for family necessaries. Within the door of the outer circle, there was a passage directly to the door of the inner house; on either side was a wicker partition, and a door, by which you go into a room twenty-two feet wide, and about thirty long, and through that into another of a smaller length, so that in the outer circle were ten handfome rooms, fix of which were only to be come at through the apartments of the inner tent, ferving as retiring rooms to the respective chambers of the inner circle, and four large warehouses, which went in through one another, two on either hand of the passage that led through the outer door to the inner tent. In short, nothing could be built more ingenuously, kept more neat, or have better conveniences; and here lived the three families, Will Atkins, his companion, their wives and children, and the widow of the deceased. As to religion, the men seldom taught their wives the knowledge of God, any more than the failors' custom of swearing by his name. The greatest improvement their wives had, was, they taught them to speak English, so as to be understood.

None of their children were then above fix years old; they were all fruitful enough; and, I think, the cook's

mate's wife was big of her fixth child.

When I inquired of the Spaniards about their circumflances while among the favages, they told me, that they abandoned themselves to despair, reckoning themselves a poor and miserable people, that had no means put into their hands, and consequently must soon be starved to death. They owned, however, that they were in the wrong to think so, and for resusing the assistance that reason offered for their support, as well as suture deliverance, confessing that grief was a most insignificant passion, as it looked upon things as without remedy, and having no hope of things to come, all which verified this noted proverb,

In trouble to be troubled, Is to have your trouble doubled,

Nor did his remarks end here; for, making observations upon my improvement, and on my condition at first, , first

pace

r re-

the

fthe

nd a

ide,

of a

nd-

ugh

ms

our

Wo

ter

uilt

re-

13,

W

ht

he

ft

0

infinitely worse than theirs, he told me, that Englishmen had, in their distress, greater presence of mind than those of any other country that he had met with; and that they and the Portuguese were the worst men in the world to flruggle under misfortunes. When they landed among the favages, they found but little provision except they would turn cannibals, there being but a few roots and herbs, with little substance in them, and of which the natives gave them but very sparingly. Many were the ways they took to civilize and teach the favages, but in vain: for they would not own them to be their instructors, whose lives were owing to their bounty. Their extremities were very great, many days being entirely without food, the favages there being more indolent and less devouring than those who had better supplies. When they went out to battle they were obliged to affift these people, in one of which my faithful Spaniard being taken, had like to have been devoured. They had lost their ammunition, which rendered their fire arms useless; nor could they use the bows and arrows that were given them, so that while the armies were at a distance, they had no chance, but when close, then they could be of service with halberts, and sharpened sticks put into the muzzles of their muskets. They made themselves targets of wood, covered with the kins of wild beafts; and when one happened to be knocked down, the rest of the company fought over him till he recovered: and then standing close in a line, they would make their way through a thousand savages. At the return of their friend, who they thought had been entombed in the bowels of their enemies, their joy was inconceivable. Nor were they less surprised at the fight of the loaves of bread I had fent them, things that they had not feen for several years, at the same time crossing and blessing it, as though it was manna fent from Heaven: but when they knew the errand, and perceived the boat which was to carry them to the person and place from whence such re-

This was the summary account that I had from them. I shall now inform the reader what I next did for them, and in what condition I left them. As we were all of opinion that the savages would scarce trouble them any more, so we had no apprehensions on that score. I told

lief came, this struck them with such a surprise of joy as made some of them faint away, and others burst out into

Tatisf

men

I had

gage

brou

but

I co

and

ed t

the

pen

stea

foo

the

nui

..

ma

in

pi

a

th

fc

uí

fo

th

li

them I was come purely to establish, and not to remove them; and upon that occasion, had not only brought them necessaries for convenience and defence, but also artificers, and other persons, both for their necessary employments, and to add to their number. They were altogether when I thus talked to them; and before I delivered to them the stores I brought, I asked them one by one, if they had entirely forgot their first animosities, would engage in the strictest friendship, and shake hands with one another? On this Will Atkins, with abundance of good humour? faid, they had afflictions enough to make them all fober, and enemies enough to make them all friends: as for himself, he would live and die among them, owning, that what the Spaniards had done to him, his own mad humour had made necessary for them to do. Nor had the Spaniards occafion to justify their proceedings to me; but they told me, that fince Will Atkins had behaved himself so valiantly in fight, and at other times shewed such a regard to the common interest of them all, they had not only forgotten all that was past, but thought he ought as much to be trusted with arms and necessaries as any of them, which they testified by making him next in command to the governor: and they most heartily embraced the occasion of giving me this folemn affurance, that they would never separate their interest again as long as they lived.

After these kind declarations of friendship, we appointed all of us to dine together the next day; upon this I caused the ship's cook and his mate to come on shore for that purpose, to assist in dressing our dinner. We brought from the ship fix pieces of beef, and four of pork, together with our punch bowl, and materials to fill it; and in particular I gave them ten bottles of French claret, and ten of English beer, which was very acceptable to them. The Spaniards added to our feast, five whole kids, which being roasted, three of them were fent as fresh meat to the failors on board, and the other two we ate ourselves. ter our merry and innocent feast was over, I began to difiribute my cargo among them. First, I gave them linen fufficient to make every one of them four shirts, and at the Spaniard's request made them up fix. The thin English fluffs I allotted to make every one a light coat like a frock, agreeable to the climate, and left them fuch a quantity as to make more upon their decay: as also pumps, shoes, hats, and stockings. It is not to be expressed the pleasing

ove

nem

ers,

nts.

en I

the

en-

the

On

id,

ind

elf,

he

a-

e,

in

n-

Ill

d

1-

:

e

r

fatisfaction which fat upon the countenances of these poor men, when they perceived what care I took of them, as if I had been a common father to them all: and they all engaged never to leave the island, till I gave my consent for their departure. I then presented to them the people I brought, to wit, the tailor, smith, and the two carpenters; but my Jack of all trades was the most acceptable present I could make them. My tailor fell immediately to work, and made every one of them a shirt; after which, he learned the women how to few and flitch, thereby to become the more helpful to their husbands. Neither were the carpenters less useful, taking in pieces their clumfy things, in. stead of which they made convenient and handsome tables, stools, bedsteads, cupboards, lockers, and shelves. when I carried them to fee Will Atkins's basket-house, they owned they never faw fuch a piece of natural ingenuity before: " I am sure," said one of the carpenters, " the man that built this has no need of us: you need, " Sir, do nothing but give him tools."

I divided the tools among them in this manner: to every man I gave a digging spade, a shovel, and a rake, as having no harrows or ploughs; and to every separate place a pickax, a crow, a broad ax, and a saw, with a store for a general supply, should any be broken or worn out. I left them also nails, staples, hinges, hammers, chissels, knives, scissars, and all sorts of tools and iron work; and for the use of the smith, gave them three tons of unwrought iron for a supply: and as to arms and ammunition, I stored them even to prosusion: or, at least, to equip a sufficient

The young man (whose mother was unfortunately starved to death) together with the maid, a pious and well educated young woman, seeing things so well ordered on shore (for I made them accompany me) and considering they had no occasion to go so far a voyage as to the East-Indies, they both desired of me, that I would leave them there, and enter them among my subjects. This I readily agreed to, ordering them a plat of ground, on which were three little houses erected, environed with basket work, pallifadoed like Atkins's, and adjoining to his plantation. So contrived were their tents, that each of them had a room apart to lodge in, while the middle tent was not only their store-house, but their place for eating and drinking. At this time the two Englishmen removed their habitation to

repli

difp

tlem

relig

give

add

as a

of a

tolo

few

mo

for

del

fhi

the

gu

bo

fe

to

th

ar

m

C

b

their former place; fo that now the island was divided into three colonies; first, Those I have just now mentioned; fecondly, That of Will Atkins, where there were four families of Englishmen, with their wives and children, the widow and her children; the young man and the maid, who, by the way, we made a wife of before our departure; three favages, who were flaves; the tailor, fmith, (who ferved also as a gunsmith) and my other celebrated person called Jack of all trades. Thirdly, My chief colony, which confifted of the Spaniards, with old Friday, who still remained at my old habitation, which was my capital city: and furely never was there fuch a metropolis, it now being hid in so obscure a grove, that a thousand men might have ranged the island a month, and looked purposely for it, without being able to find it, though the Spaniards had enlarged its boundaries, both without and within, in a most furprising manner.

But now I think it high time to speak of the young French priest of the order of St. Benedict, whose judicious and pious discourses, upon sundry occasions, merit an extraordinary observation; nor can his being a French Papist priest, I presume, give offence to any of my readers, when they have this assurance from me, that he was a person of the most courteous disposition, extensive charity, and exalted piety. His arguments were always agreeable to reason, and his conversation the most acceptable of any person that I had ever yet met with in my life.

" Sir," faid he, to me, one day, " fince, under God," at the same time crossing his breast, so you have not only " faved my life; but, by permitting me to go this voy-" age, have granted me the happiness of free conversation, I think it my duty, as my profession obliges me, to " fave what fouls I can, by bringing them to the knowse ledge of some Catholic doctrine, necessary to falvation; and fince these people are under your immediate go-" vernment, in gratitude, justice, and decency, for what " you have done for me, I shall offer no farther points in " religion, than what shall merit your approbation." Being pleased with the modesty of his carriage, I told him he should not be worse used for being of a different perfuafion, if, upon that very account, we did not differ in points of faith, not decent in a part of the country, where the poor Indians ought to be instructed in the knowledge

of the true God, and his Son Jesus Christ. To this he

into

ed;

fa-

the

aid,

re:

vho

fon

ich

re-

ty:

ing

ave

it,

ad

oft

ng

us

X-

iff

en

of

X-

a-

on

33

ly

y -

1-

to

7-

9

)-

ıt

n

n

n

e

replied, that conversation might easily be separated from disputes; that he would discourse with me rather as a gentleman than a religious; but that, if we did enter upon religious arguments, upon my desiring the same, I would give him liberty to defend his own principles. He farther added, that he would do all that became him in his office, as a priest as well as a Christian, to procure the happiness of all that were in the ship: that though he could not pray with, he would pray for us, on all occasions; and then he told me several extraordinary events of his life, within a few years past; but particularly in this last, which was the most remarkable: that, in this voyage, he had the miffortune to be five times shipped and unshipped: his first defign was to have gone to Martinico: for which, taking ship at St. Malo, he was forced into Lisbon by bad weather, the vessel running a-ground in the mouth of the Tagus: that from thence he went on board a Portuguese ship, bound to the Madeiras, whose master being but an indifferent mariner, and out of his reckoning, they were drove to Fial, where felling their commodity, which was corn, they resolved to take in their loading at the Isle of May, and to fail to Newfoundland; at the Banks of which, meeting a French ship bound to Quebec, in the river of Canada, and from thence to Martinico, in this ship he embarked; the master of which dying at Quebec, that voyage was suspended; and lastly, shipping himself for France, this last ship was destroyed by fire, as before has been related.

At this time we talked no further; but another morning he comes to me, just as I was going to visit the Englishman's colony, and tells me, that as he knew the profperity of the island was my principal defire, he had fomething to communicate agreeable to my defign, by which perhaps he might put it, more than he yet thought it was, in the way of the benediction of heaven. " How, Sir?" faid I, in a surprise, " are we not yet in the way of God's bleffing, after all these signal providences and deliverances, of which you have had such an ample relation?" He replied, "I hope, Sir, you are in the way, and that your good design will prosper: but still there are some among you that are not equally right in their actions; and remember, I beseech you, Sir, that Achan, by his crime, removed God's bleffing from the camp of the children of Israel: that though fix and thirty were entirely innocent, yet they

HP

the

ch

ad

be

VC

W

th

th

fe

th

t

0

became the objects of divine vengeance, and bore the

weight of the punishment accordingly."

So fensibly was I touched with this discourse, and so satisfied with that ardent piety that inflamed his soul, that I desired him to accompany me to the Englishmen's plantations, which he was very glad of, by reason they were the subject of what he designed to discourse with me about: and while we walked on together, he began in the follow-

ing manner:

" Sir, said he, I must confess it is a great unhappiness that we disagree in several doctrinal articles of religion; but, furely both of us acknowledge this, that there is a God, who having given us some stated rules for our service and obedience, we ought not willingly and knowingly to offend him, either by neglecting what he has commanded, or by doing what he has forbidden. This truth every Christian owns, that when any one presumptuously fins against God's command, the Almighty then withdraws his bleffing from him; every good man therefore ought certainly to prevent such neglect of, or fin against God and his commands. I thanked the young priest for expressing so great a concern for us, and defired him to explain the particulars of what he had observed, that, according to the parable of Achan, I " might remove the accursed thing from among us." Why then, Sir, faid he, in the first place, you have four Englishmen, who have taken favage women to their wives, by whom they have feveral children, though none of them are legally married, as the law of God and man requires; they, I fay, Sir, are no less than adulterers, and as they still live in adultery, are liable to the curse of God. I know, Sir, you may object the want of a prieft, or clergyman of any kind; as also, pen, ink, and paper, to write down a contract of marriage, and have it figned between them. neither this, nor what the Spanish governor has told you, of their choosing by consent, can be reckoned a marriage, nor any more than an agreement to keep them from quarrelling among themselves; for, Sir, the essence or sacrament of matrimony (fo he called it) not only confifts in mutual consent, but in the legal obligation, which compels them to own and acknowledge one another, to abstain from other persons, the men to provide for their wives and children, and the women to the same and like conditions, mutatis, mutandis, on their side: whereas, Sir, these men,

he

a-

e

G

;

a

upon their own pleasure, on any occasion, may forsake those women, and marry others, and by disowning their children, suffer them utterly to perish." Now, Sir," added he, " can God be honoured in such an unlawful liberty as this? how can a bleffing succeed the best endeayours, if men are allowed to live in fo licentious a way?" I was indeed fruck with the thing myfelf, and thought that they were much to blame, that no formal contract had been made, though it had been but breaking a stick between them, to engage them to live as man and wife, never to feparate, but love, cherish, and comfort one another all their lives; " yet, Sir," faid I, " when they took thefe women, I was not here, and if it is adultery, it is past my remedy, and I cannot help it." "True, Sir," answered the young prieft, " you cannot be charged with that part of the crime which was done in your absence: but I befeech you, don't flatter yourself, that you are under no obligation now to put a period to it: which if you neglect to do, the guilt will be entirely on you alone, fince it is dition." I must confess, I was so dull, that I thought he meant I should part them, and knowing that this would put the whole island in confusion, I told him I could not consent to it upon any account whatsoever. "Sir," faid he, in a great surprise, " I do not mean that you should separate, but marry them, by a written contract, signed by both man and woman, and by all the witnesses present, which all the European laws decree to be of sufficient ef-Amazed with fuch true piety and fincerity, and confidering the validity of a written contract, I acknowledged all that he faid to be very just and kind, and that I would discourse with the men about it; neither could I fee what reason they could have not to let him marry them, whose authority in that affair is owned to be as authentic as if they were married by any of our clergy men in. England.

The next complaint he had to make to me was this, that though these English subjects of mine have lived with these women seven years, and though they were of good understanding, and capable of instruction, having learned not only to speak, but to read English, yet all this while they had never taught them any thing of the Christian religion, or the knowledge of God, much less in what manner he ought to be served. "And is not this an unaccount-

12

the

2 1

(fa

tal

fat

2

in

til

min

di

ev

m

m

n

0

to

u

d

f

t

able neglect?" faid he warmly. "Depend upon it, God Almighty will call them to account for such contempt. And though I am not of your religion, yet I should be glad to see these people released from the devil's power, and be saved by the principles of the Christian religion, the knowledge of God, of a Redeemer, the resurrection, and of a future state. But as it is not too late, if you please to give me leave to instruct them, I doubt not but I shall supply this great defect, by bringing them into the great circle of Christianity, even while you continue in the issand."

I could hold no longer, but embracing him, told him, with a thousand thanks, I would grant whatever he requested, and desired him to proceed in the third article,

which he did in the following manner:

"Sir," faid he, "it should be a maxim among all Christians, that Christian knowledge ought to be propagated by all possible means, and on all occasions. Upon this account our church sends missionaries into Persia, India, and China, men who are willing to die for the sake of God and the Christian faith, in order to bring poor insidels into the way of salvation. Now, Sir, as here is an opportunity to convert seven and thirty poor savages, I wonder how you can pass by such an occasion of doing good, which is really worth the expence of a man's whole life."

I must confess I was so confounded at this discourse, that I could not tell how to answer him. " Sir," said he, seeing me in disorder, " I shall be very forry if I have given you offence." " No, Sir," faid I, " I am rather confounded; and you know my circumstances, that being bound to the East Indies in a merchant ship, I cannot wrong the owners fo much, as to detain the ship here, the men lying at victuals and wages on their account. If I stay above twelve days, I must pay 31. sterling per diem demurrage, nor must the ship stay above eight days more; so that I am unable to engage in this work, unless I would leave the ship, and be reduced to my former condition." The priest, though he owned this was hard upon me, yet laid it to my conscience, whether the bleffing of saving seven and thirty fouls was not worth venturing all that I had in the world?" " Sir," faid I, " it is very true: but as you are an ecclesiastic, it naturally falls into your profession; why, therefore, don't you rather offer to undertake it yourfelf, then press me to it?" Upon this he turned about, making a very low bow, "I most humbly thank God and you, Sir, (said he) for so blessed a call: and most willingly undertake so glorious an office, which will sufficiently compensate all the hazards and difficulties I have gone through in

a long and uncomfortable voyage."

t.

e

r,

1,

1,

e

H

e

While he was thus speaking, I could discover a rapture in his face, by his colour going and coming; at the same time his eyes sparkled like fire, with all the signs of the most zealous transports. And when I asked whether he was in earnest? "Sir," said he, "it was to preach to the Indians, I consented to come along with you: these insidels, even in this little island, are infinitely of more worth than my poor life; if so that I should prove the happy instrument of saving these poor creatures souls, I care not if I never see my native country again. One thing I only beg of you more, is, that you would leave Friday with me, to be my interpreter, without whose assistance neither of us will understand each other."

This request very sensibly troubled me: first, upon Friday's being bred a Protestant; and, secondly, for the affection I bore to him for his sidelity: But, immediately the remembrance of Friday's father coming into my head, I recommended him to him as having learned Spanish, which the priest also understood: and so was thoroughly

fatisfied with him...

When we came to the Englishmen, after I had told them what necessary things I had done for them, I talked to them of the scandalous life they led, told them what notice the clergyman had taken of it, and asked them if they were married men or bachelors? They answered, two of them were widowers, and the other three fingle men. But, faid I, with what conscience can you call these your wives, by whom you have so many children, and yet are not lawfully married? The all faid, that they took them before the governor as fuch, having nobody else to marry them, which they thought as legal, as if they had had a parson. No doubt, said I, but in the eye of God it is so: but unless I am affured of your honest intent, never to desert these poor creatures, I can do nothing more for you, neither can you expect God's bleffing while you live in such an open course of adultery. Hereupon, Will Atkins, who spoke for the rest, told me, That they believed their wives the most innocent and virtuous creatures in the world; that

ou

re

br

ut

w

in

pe

an

of

an

le

hi

A

re

bı

W

fa

they would never for sake them while they had breath; and that, if there was a clergyman in the ship, they would be married to them with all their hearts. I told you before, said I, that I have a minister with me, who shall marry you to-morrow morning, if you are willing; so I would have you consult to-night with the rest about it. I told him the clergyman was a Frenchman, and knew not a word of English, but that I would act as a clerk between them. And indeed this business met with such speedy success, that they all told me, in a few minutes after, that they were ready to be formally married, as soon as I pleased; with which

informing the priest, he was exceedingly rejoiced. Nothing now remained, but that the women should be made fenfible of the meaning of the thing; with which being well fatisfied, they with their husbands attended at my apartment the next morning; there was my priest, habited in a black vest, something like a cassock, with a fash round it, much refembling a minister, and I was his interpreter. But the feriousness of his behaviour, and the scruples he made of marrying the women, who were not baptised, gave them an exceeding reverence for his person: nor indeed would he marry them at all, till he obtained my liberty to discourse both with the men and women, and then he told them, That in the fight of all indifferent men, and in the fense of the laws of society, they had lived in open adultery, which nothing now, but their consent to marry, or final separation, could put an end to; and even here was a difficulty with respect to the laws of Christian matrimony, in marrying a professed Christian to a heathen idolater, unbaptized; but yet there was time enough to make them profess the name of Christ, without which nothing could be done; that, besides, he believed themselves very indifferent Christians; and consequently had not discoursed with their wives upon that subject; and that unless they promised him to do so, he could not marry them, as being expreisly forbidden by the laws of God.

All this they heard attentively, and owned readily.

fhould we teach them religion, who know nothing of it ourselves? How can we talk to our wives of God, Jesus Christ, heaven and hell? why they would only laugh at us, who never yet have practised religion, but on the contrary all manner of wickedness." "Will Atkins," said I, "cannot you tell your wife she is in the wrong, and that her gods are idols, which can neither speak, nor understand; but that

nd

be

e,

OU

ve

he

g-

d

y

y

e

d

our God, who has made, can destroy all things; that he rewards the good and punishes the wicked; and at last will bring us to judgment : cannot you tell her these things?" "That's true," faid Atkins, "but then she'll tell me it is utterly false, fince I am not punished and sent to the devil, who hath been such a wicked creature." These words I interpreted to the priest ! " O !" faid he, " tell him, his repentance will make him a very good minister to his spouse, and qualify him to preach on the mercy and long fuffering of a merciful Being, who defires not the death of a finner, and even defers damnation to the last judgment; this will lead him to the doctrine of the refurrection, and will make him an excellent preacher to his wife." I repeated this to Atkins, who being more than ordinary affected with it, replied, " I know all this, Sir, and a great deal more; but how can I have the impudence to talk thus to my wife, when my conscience witnesses against me?" Alas!" faid he (with tears in his eye, and giving a great figh) " as for repenting, that is for ever past me." " Past you! Atkins," faid I, " what do you mean?" " You know well enough," faid he, "what I mean; I mean it is too late."

When I told the priest what he said, the poor affectionate man could not refrain from weeping; but recovering himself, "Pray, Sir," said he, "ask him if he is contented that it is too late; or is he concerned, and wishes it were not so?" This question I put fairly to Atkins, who replied in a passion, "How can I be easy in a state which I know must terminate in my ruin? for I really believe, some time or other, I shall cut my throat, to put a period both to my

life, and to the terrors of my conscience."

At this the clergyman shook his head, "Sir," said he, "pray tell him it is not too late; Christ will give him repentance, if he has recourse to the merit of his passion. Does he think he is beyond the power of Divine Mercy? There may indeed be a time when provoked mercy will no longer strive, but never too late for men to repent in this world." I told Atkins every word the priest had said, who then parted from us to walk with his wife, while we discoursed with the rest. But these were very stupid in religious matters, yet all of them promised to do their endeavours to make their wives turn Christians; and upon which promises the priest married the three couple. But as Atkins was the only sincere convert, and of more sense than

our

the

I ar

and

my

ed

you

tou

fio

The

in

Bu

yo

fo

ar

pa

y

K

V

1

the rest, my clergyman was earnestly inquiring after him: "Sir," faid he, " let us walk out of this labyrinth, and I dare fay we shall find this poor man preaching to his wife already." And indeed we found it true; for coming to the edge of the wood, we perceived Atkins and his favage wife fitting under the shade of a bush, in very earnest discourse; he pointed to the sun, to the quarters of the earth, to himfelf, to her, the woods, and the trees. Immediately we could perceive him fart upon his feet, fall down upon his knees, and lift up both his hands; at which the tears ran down my clergyman's cheeks; but our great misfortune was, we could not hear one word that passed between them. Another time he would embrace her, wiping the tears from her eyes, kissing her with the greatest transports, and then both kneel down for some minutes together. Such raptures of joy did this occasion in my young priest, that he could scarcely contain himself: And a little after this, we observed by her motion, as frequently lifting up her hands, and laying them on her breast, that she was mightily affected with his discourse, and so they withdrew from our fight.

When we came back, we found them both waiting to be called in; upon which he agreed to examine him alone, and so I began thus to discourse him. "Prithee, Will Atkins," said I, "what education had you? What was your father?

W. A. A better man than ever I shall be: he was, Sir, a clergyman, who gave me good instruction, or correction, which I despised, like a brute as I was, and murdered my poor father.

Pr. Ha! a murderer!

[Here the Priest started and looked pale, as thinking he had really killed his father.]

R. C. What, did you kill him with your hands?

W. A. No, Sir, I cut not his throat, but broke his heart by the most unnatural turn of disobedience to the tenderest and best of fathers.

R. C. Well, I pray God grant you repentance: I did not ask you to extort a confession; but I asked you because I see you have more knowledge of what is good than your companions.

W. A. O, Sir, whenever I look back upon my past life, conscience upbraids me with my father: the sins against

our parents make the deepest wounds, and their weight lies the heaviest upon the mind.

R. C. You talk, Will, too feelingly and fenfibly for me;

I am not able to bear it.

m:

ife

to

ge if-

th,

ely

on

ars

en

he

ts,

er.

ft,

ter

as

W

be

e,

ill

as

r,

n,

y

id

15

e

d

e

r

W. A. You bear it, Sir! you know nothing of it.

R. C. But yes, Atkins, I do; and every shore, valley, and tree in this island, witness the anguish of my soul for my undutifulness to my kind father, whom I have murdered likewise; yet my repentance falls infinitely short of yours. But, Will, how comes the sense of this matter to touch you just now?

W. A. Sir, the work you have fet me about, has occafioned it; for talking to my wife about God and religion, she has preached me such a sermon, that I shall retain it.

in lasting remembrance.

R. C. No, no, it is your own moving pious arguments to her, has made conscience sling them back upon you. But pray, Atkins, inform us what passed between you and your wife, and in what manner did you begin.

W. A. I talked to her of the laws of marriage, the reafon of fuch compacts, whereby order and justice is maintained; without which, men would run from their wives and children, to the dissolution of families or inheritances.

R. C. Well, and what did she say to all this?

W. A. Sir, we began our discourse in the following manner, which I shall exactly repeat according to my mean capacity, if you think it worth your while to honour it with your attention.

The DIALOGUE between Will Atkins and his Wife in the wood.

Wife. YOU tell me marriage God appoint, have you God in your country?

W. A. Yes, child, God is in every nation,

Wife. No; great old Benamuckee God is in my country, not yours.

W. A. My dear, God is in heaven, which he made; he

also made the earth, the sea, and all that is therein.

Wife. Why you not tell me much long ago?

W. A. My dear, I have been a wicked wretch, having a long time lived without the knowledge of God in the world.

Wife. What, not know great God in own nation? No do good ting? No fay O to him? that's strange!

W. A. But, my dear, many live as if there was no God

ab

ar

te

m

hi

(]

d

tl

a

y

F

in heaven for all that.

Wife. Why God suffer this? why makee not live well?

W. A. It is our own faults, child.

Wife. But if he much great, can make kill, why no make kill when no ferve him? No be good mans, no cry O to him?

W. A. That's true, my dear, he may strike us dead, but his abundant mercy spareth us.

Wife. Did not you tell God tankee for that?

W. A. No, I have neither thanked him for his mercy, nor feared him for his power.

Wife. Then me not believe your God be good, nor

makee kill, when you makee him angry.

W. A. Alas! must my wicked life hinder you from believing in him?

Wife. How can me tink your God live there? (pointing

to beaven.) Sure he no ken what you do here.

W. A. Yes, my dear, he hears us speak, sees what we do, and knows what we even think.

Wife. Where then makee power strong, when he hears

you curse, swear de great damn?

W. A. My dear, this shews he is indeed a God and not a man, who has such tender mercy.

Wife. Mercy! what you call mercy?

W. A. He pities and spares us: as he is our great Creator, so is he also our tender father.

Wife. So God never angry, never kill wicked, then he

no good, no great mighty.

W. A. O my dear, don't fay so, he is both; and many simes he shews terrible examples of his judgment and vengeance.

Wife. Then you makee de bargain with him; you do

bad ting, he no hurt you, he hurt other mans.

W. A. No, indeed, my fins are all presumptions upon his goodness.

Wife. Well, and yet no makee you dead; and you give him no tankee neither?

W. A. It is true, I am an ungrateful, unthankful dog, that I am.

Wife. Why, you fay, he makee you, why makee you no much better then?

W. A. It is I alone that have deformed myfelf, and abused his goodness.

Wife. Pray makee God know me, me no makee him

angry, no do bad ting.

No

od

1 ?

no

ry

d,

or

8

5

W. A. You mean, my dear, that you defire I would teach you to know God: alas! poor dear creature, he must teach thee, and not I. But I'll pray earnestly to him to direct thee, and to forgive me, a miserable sinner. (Hereupon he went a little distance, and kneeling down, prayed earnestly to God to enlighten her mind, and to pardon his sins; when this was done, they continued their discourse thus.)

Wife. What you put down knee for? For what hold up

hand? Who you speak to?

W. A. My dear, I bowed in token of submission to him that made me, and prayed that he would open your eyes and understanding.

Wife. And can he do that too? And will he hear what

you fay?

W. A. Yes, my dear, he bids us pray, and has given us promise that he will hear us.

Wife. When did he bid you pray? What! do you hear

him speak?

W. A. No, my dear, but God has spoken formerly to good men from heaven; and by divine revelation they have written all his laws down in a book.

Wife. O where dat good book?

W. A. I have it now by me; but one time or other I shall get it for you to read. Then he embraced her with great affection.

Wife. Pray tell a mee, did God teachee them write that

book?

W. A. Yes, and by that rule we know him to be God.

Wife. What way, what rule you know him?

W. A. Because he teaches what is good, just, and holy; and forbids all wicked and abominable actions that incur

his displeasure.

Wife. O me fain understand that, and if he do all things you say he do, surely he hear me say O to him; he make me good if I wish to be good; he no kill me if I love him; me tink, believe him great God; me say O to him; along with you my dear.

Here the poor man fell upon his knees, and made her kneel down by him, praying with the greatest fervency,

1 6

that God would instruct her by his Holy Spirit; and that God by his providence would send them a Bible for both their instructions. And such was the early piety of this new convert, that she made him promise never to forsake God any more, lest, being made dead, as she called it, she should not only want her instructor, but himself be miser-

able in a long eternity.

Such a surprising account as this was, proved very affeeting to us both, but particularly to the young clergyman, who was mightily concerned he could not talk to her himself. "Sir," said he, " there is something more to be done to this woman than to marry her: I mean that the ought to be baptized." To this I prefently agreed: " Pray," faid he, " ask her husband, whether he has ever talked to her of Jesus Christ, the salvation of sinners, the nature of faith, and redemption in and by him, of the Holy Spirit, the resurrection, last judgment, and a future state;" but the poor fellow melted into tears at this question, saying, that he had faid something to her of these things, but his inability to talk of them, made him afraid, left her knowledge of them should rather make her contemn religion, than be benefited by it: but that if I would discourse with her, it would be very evident my labour would not be in vain. Accordingly I called her in, and placing myself as interpreter between the religious priest and the woman, I intreated him to go on; but furely never was such a sermon preached by any clergyman in these latter days, with fo much zeal, knowledge, and fincerity; in short, he brought the woman to embrace the knowledge of Christ, and of redemption by him, with so surprising a degree of understanding, that she made it her own request to be baptized.

He then performed his office in the facrament of baptism, first, by saying some words over to himself in Latin, and then asking me to give her a name, as being her godfather, and pouring a whole dish full of water upon the woman's head, he said, "Mary, I baptize thee in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost;" so that none could know of what religion he was. After this he pronounced the benediction in Latin. Thus the woman being made a Christian, he married her to Will Atkins; which being finished, he affectionately exhorted him to lead a holy life for the future; and since the Almighty, by the convictions of his conscience, had honoured him to be the instrument of his wife's conversion, he should

conved a

to g

flar a c wit flia par his raf the to ha int

> P a n a

W

ho

to

i

at

th

nis

ke

he

r-

f-

y-

er

to

at

:

r

e

y

t

r

not dishonour the grace of God, that while the savage was converted, the instrument should be cast away. Thus ended a ceremony, to me the most pleasant and agreeable I ever passed in my life.

The affairs of the island being settled, I was preparing to go on board, when the young man (whose mother was starved) came to me, saying, that as he understood I had a clergyman with me, who had married the Englishmen with favages, he had a match to make between two Christians, which he defired might be finished before I de-Thinking that it was he himself that had courted his mother's maid, I persuaded him not to do any thing rashly upon the account of his solitary circumstances; that the maid was an unequal match for him, both in respect to substance and years; and that it was very probable he would live to return to his own country, where he might have a far better choice. At these words, smiling, he interrupted me, thanking me for my good advice; that as he had nothing to beg of me but a small settlement, with a fervant or two, or some new necessaries, so he hoped I would not be unmindful of him when I returned to England, but give his letters to his friends; and that when he was redeemed, the plantation, and all its improvements, however valuable, should be returned to me again. But as for the marriage he proposed, that it was not himself, but that it was between my Jack of all trades and the maid Susan.

I was indeed agreeably furprifed at the mentioning this match, which feemed very fuitable, the one being a very ingenious fellow, and the other an excellent, dexterous, and fenfible housewife, fit to be governess of the whole island: so we married them the same day; and, as I was her father, and gave her away, fo I gave her a handsome portion, appointing her and her husband a conveni-The shaent large space of ground for their plantation. ring out of the land I left to Will Atkins, who really divided it very justly, to every person's satisfaction; they only defired one general writing under my hand for the whole, which I caused to be drawn up, figned, and sealed to them, fetting out their bounds, and giving them a right to the whole possession of their respective plantations, with their improvements, to them and their heirs, reserving all the rest of the island as my own property, and a certain rent for every particular plantation, after eleven years.

man

be e

in th

fron

WOT

she

ly c

had

the

flee

kec

mo

fle

day

wi

Ba

ly.

fu

W

1

fu

fo

W

fi

As to their laws and government, I exhorted them to love one another; and as to the Indians who lived in a nook by themselves, I allotted three or four of them plantations, and the rest willingly chose to become servants to the other families, by which means they were employed in useful labour, and fared much better than they did before. fides, the favages being thus mixed with the Christians, the work of their conversion might be set on foot by the latter, in the clergyman's abfence, to our equal fatisfaction. The young priest, however, was a little anxious lest the Christians should not be willing to do their parts in instructing those poor Indians; I therefore told him we should call them all together; that he should speak to the Spaniards who were Papists, and I to the English who were Protestants, and make them promise that they would never make any distinction in religion, but teach the general true knowledge of God, and his Son Jesus Christ, in order to convert the poor favages. And this, indeed, they all pro-

mifed us accordingly. When I came to Will Atkins's house, I found his baptised wife, and the young woman newly married to my Jack of all trades, were become great intimates. and difcoursing of religion together. "O, Sir," says Will Atkins, "when God has finners to reconcile to himself, he never wants an instructor: I knew I was unworthy of so good a work, and therefore this young woman has been fent hither as it were from heaven, who is sufficient to convert a whole nation of favages." The young woman blushed, and was going to rise; but I defired her to fit still, and hoped that God would bless her in so good a work; and then, pulling out a Bible (which I brought on purpose in my pocket for him) "Here, Atkins," faid I, "here is an affistant that perhaps you had not before." So confounded was the poor man, that it was some time before he could speak : at last, turning to his wife, " My dear," he faid, " did I not tell you that God could hear what we faid? Here's the book I prayed for, when you and I kneeled under the bush: God then heard us, and now has fent it." The woman was furprized, and thought really God had fent that individual book from heaven; but I turned to the young woman, and defired her to explain to the young convert, that God may properly be faid to answer our petitions, when, in the course of his providence, such particular things come to pass as we petitioned for. This the young woman did effectually; but furely Will Atkins's joy cannot be expressed; no man being more thankful for any thing in the world, than he was for his Bible, nor defired it from a better principle.

After several religious discourses, I desired the young woman to give me an account of the anguish she felt when she was starving to death with hunger; to which she readi-

ly consented, and began in the following manner:

ove

by

ons,

ther

la-

Be-

ans,

the

on.

the

in-

uld

rds

ts,

ny

W-

n-

0-

0-

y

s,

1

a

ı

ì

" Sir," faid she, " all our victuals being gone, after I had fasted one day, my stomach was very fickly, and, at the approach of night, I was inclined to yawning and fleepy. When I flept upon the couch three hours, I awaked a little refreshed: three hours after, my stomach being more and more fickly, I lay down again, but could not fleep, being very faint and ill. Thus I passed the second day with a strange variety, first hungry, then fick again, with reachings to vomit: that night I dreamed I was at Barbadoes, buying plenty of provisions, and dined heartily. But when I awaked, my spirits were exceedingly funk, to find myself in the extremity of famine. was but one glass of wine, which being mixed with sugar, I drank up; but for want of substance to digest upon, the fumes of it got into my head, and made me senseless for The third day I was fo ravenous and furious, that I could have eaten a little child if it had come in my way; during which time, I was as mad as any creature in Bedlam. In one of these fits I fell down, and struck my face against the corner of a pallet bed, where my mistress lay: the blood gushed out of my nose, but by my excesfive bleeding, both the violence of the fever, and the ravenous part of the hunger abated. After this, I grew fick again, strove to vomit, but could not; then bleeding a fecond time, I swooned away as dead; when I came to myfelf, I had a dreadful gnawing pain in my stomach, which went off towards night, with a longing defire for food. I took a draught of water and fugar, but it came up again; then I drank water without fugar, and that staid with me. I laid me down on the bed, praying God would take me away; after I had flumbered, I thought myself a-dying, therefore recommended my foul to God, and wished some-All this while my debody would throw me into the fea. parting mistress lay by me; the last bit of bread she had, the gave to her dear child, my young master. The morning after, I fell into a violent passion of crying, and after

that into hunger. I espied the blood that came from my nose in a bason, which I immediately swallowed up. At night I had the usual variations, as the pain in the stomach, sick, sleepy, and ravenous; and I had no thought but that I should die before morning. In the morning came on terrible gripings in my bowels. At this time, I heard my young master's lamentations, by which I understood his mother was dead. Soon after, the sailors cried, "A sail! A sail!" hallooing as if they were distracted for joy of that relief, which afterwards we received:

from your hands."

Surely never was a more distinct account of starving to death than this. But to return to the disposition of things among my people, I did not take any notice to them of the floop that I had framed, neither would I leave them the two pieces of brass cannon, or the two quarter deck guns that I had on board, left, upon any disgust, they should have separated, or turned pirates, and so made the island a den of thieves, instead of a plantation of sober pious people: but leaving them in a flourishing condition, with a promise to send them further relief from Brazil, as sheep, hogs, and cows (being obliged to kill the latter at sea, having no hay to feed them) I went on board the ship again, the first of May, 1695, after having been twenty days among them; and next morning, giving them a falute of five guns at parting, we fet fail for the Brazils. The third day, towards evening, there happening a calm, and the current being very strong, we were drove to the N. N. E. towards the land. Some hours after, we perceived the fea covered as it were with something very black, not easily at first to be discovered: upon which our chief mate ascending. the shrouds a little way, and taking a view with a perspective glass, he cries out, "An army! An army;" "you fool," faid I, "what do you mean?" " Nay, Sir," faid he, " don't be angry, I assure you it is not only an army, but a fleet too; for I believe there are a thousand canoes paddling along, and making with great hafte towards us."

Indeed every one of us were surprised at this relation: and my nephew the captain could not tell what to think of it, but thought we should all be devoured. Nor was I free from concern, when I considered how much we were becalmed, and what a strong current set towards the shore: however, I encouraged him not to be afraid, but bring the ship to an anchor, as soon as we were certain that we

must our state o

me He wh fly on fir bo th fo

k

0

1:

eft

TOV

my

At

to-

ght

ing

, 1

ın-

ors

di-

ed:

to

gs.

of

m.

ns .

ld

a.

)-

a

, ,

-

9

f

1

2

must engage them. Accordingly we did so, and surled all our sails: as to the savages we feared nothing, but only that they might set the ship on fire; to prevent which, I ordered them to get their boats out, and fasten them, one close by the head, and the other by the stern, well manned, with skeets and buckets to extinguish the slames, should it so happen. The savages soon came up with us, but there were not so many as the mate had said, for instead of a thousand canees, there were only one hundred and twenty; too many indeed for us, several of their canoes containing about sixteen or seventeen men.

As they approached us, they feemed to be in the greatest amazement, not knowing what to make of us. rowed round the ship, which occasioned us to call to the men in the boats, not to suffer them to come near them. Hereupon they beckoned to the favages to keep back, which they accordingly did; but at their retreat they let fly about fifty arrows among us, and very much wounded one of our men in the long-boat. I called to them not to fire upon any account, but handing them down some deal boards, the carpenters made them a kind of fence to shield them from the arrows. In half an hour after they came fo near aftern of us, that we had a perfect fight of them; then they rowed a little farther out, till they came directly along-fide of us, and then approached so near, that they could hear us speak: this made me order all our men to keep close, and get their guns ready. In the mean time I ordered Friday to go out upon deck, and ask them in his language what they meant? No sooner did he do so, but fix of the favages, who were in the foremost canoes, stooping down, shewed us their naked backsides, as much as to fay in English, kiss our ---: but Friday quickly knew what this meant, by immediately crying out they were going to shoot; unfortunately for him, poor creature! who fell under the cloud of three hundred arrows, no less than feven piercing through his body, killing one of the best fervants, and faithfulest of companions in all my solitudes and afflictions.

So enraged was I at the death of poor Friday, that the guns, which before were charged with only powder, to frighten them, I ordered to be loaded with small shot; nor did the gunners fail in their aim, but at this broad-side split and overset thirteen or fourteen of their canoes, which killed numbers of them, and set the rest a swim-

ming: the others, frightened out of their wits, little regarding their fellows drowning, scoured away as fast as they could. One poor wretch our people took up, fwimming for his life, an hour after. He was very fullen at first, so that he would neither eat nor speak : but I took a way to cure him, by ordering them to throw him into the fea, which they did, and then he came swimming back like a cork, calling in his tongue, as I suppose, to fave him. So we took him on board, but it was a long time before we could make him speak or understand English: yet when we had taught him, he told us they were going with their kings to fight a great battle; and when we asked him, what made them come up to us? he faid, "to makee de great wonder look:" where, it is to be noted, that those natives, and those of Africa, always add two e's at the end of English words, as makee, takee, and the like, from which it is a very difficult thing to make them break off.

Being now under fail, we took our last farewel of poor honest Friday, and interred him with all possible decency and solemnity, putting him in a cossin, and committing him to the deep, at the same time causing eleven guns to be fired at him. Thus ended the life of one of the most grateful, faithful, honest, and affectionate servants, that

ever any man was bleffed with in the world.

Having now a fair wind for Brazil, in about twelve days time we made land in the latitude of five degrees fouth of the line. Four days we kept on S. by E. in fight of shore, when we made Cape St. Augustin, and in three days we came up to an anchor off the Bay of All Saints. I had great difficulty here to get leave to hold correspondence on shore: for neither the figure of my partner, my two merchant trustees, nor the fame of my wonderful preservation in the island, could procure me the favour, till such time as the prior of the monastry of the Augustines (to whom I had given 500 moidores) obtained leave from the Governor, for me personally, with the Captain and one more, together with eight failors, to come on shore: upon this condition, that we should not land any goods out of the ship, nor carry any person away without licence: I found means however to get on shore three bales of English goods, such as fine broad cloths, stuffs, and some linen, which I brought as a present for my partner, who had sent me on board a present of fresh provisions, wine, and sweetmeats co, a

H flerli the u and f finish ticula with there allot and flave part plan chui to b mak Iw ther alre but I pr our wer boa ing oth cal and to ma WIV car wh

> me gr an

ple

O

meats, worth above thirty moidores, including some tobac-

co, and three or four fine gold medals.

re-

ft as

vim-

en at

ok a

the

ack

im.

fore

yet

vith

ked

kee-

hat

e's

ke.

ak

or

CY.

ng

to

oft

at

VS

of

e,

/e

d

n

.

h

0

e

e

1

Here I delivered my partner in goods to the value of 100l. flerling, and obliged him to fit up the floop I bought for the use of my island, in order to send them refreshments: and so active was he in this matter, that he had the vessel finished in a few days, to the master of which I gave particular instructions to find the place. I soon loaded him with a small cargo; and one of our failors offered to settle there, upon my letter to the Spanish governor, if I would allot him tools and a plantation. This I willingly granted, and gave him the favage we had taken prisoner to be his All things being ready for the voyage, my old partner told me, there was an acquaintance of his, a Brazil planter, who having fallen under the displeasure of the church, and in fear of the Inquisition, which obliged him to be concealed, would be glad of fuch an opportunity to make his escape, with his wife and two daughters; and if I would allot them a plantation in my island, he would give them a small stock to begin with, for that the officers had already seized his effects and estate, and left him nothing but a little household stuff, and two slaves. This request I presently granted, concealing him and his family on board our ship, till such time as the sloop (where all the effects were) was gone out of the bay, and then we put them on board, who carried some materials, and plants for planting fugar-canes, along with them. By this floop, among other things, I fent my subjects three milch cows and five calves, about 22 hogs, three fows big with pig, two mares and a stone horse. I also engaged three Portugal women to go for fake of the Spaniards, which, with the persecuted man's two daughters, were sufficient, since the rest had wives of their own, though in another country; all which cargo arrived fafe, no doubt to their exceeding comfort, who, with this addition, were about fixty or seventy people, besides children.

At this place, my truly honest and pious clergyman left me; for a ship being ready to set sail for Lisbon, he asked me leave to go thither; but I assure you, it was with the greatest reluctance I parted from a person, whose virtue

and piety merited the greatest esteem.

From the Brazils, we made directly over the Atlantic Ocean, to the Cape of Good Hope, having a tolerable good voyage, steering for the most part S. E. We were

on a trading voyage, and had a supercargo on board, who was to direct all the ship's motions after she arrived at the Cape, only being limited to a certain number of days, for stay, by charter party, at the several ports she was to go to. At the Cape, we only took in fresh water, and then sailed for the coast of Coromandel: we were there informed, that a French man of war of 50 guns, and two large merchant ships, were sailed for the Indies, but we heard no more of them.

In our passage, we touched at the island of Madagascar, where, though the inhabitants are naturally sierce and treacherous, and go constantly armed with bows and lances, yet for some time they treated us civily enough; and, in exchange for knives, scissars, and other trisles, they brought us eleven good fat bullocks, which we took partly for present victuals, and the remainder to salt for the ship's use.

So curious was I to view every corner of the world where I came to, that I went on shore as often as I could. One evening when on shore, we observed numbers of the people stand gazing at us at a distance. We thought ourfelves in no danger, as they had hitherto used us kindly. However, we cut three boughs out of a tree, sticking them at a distance from us, which it seems, in that country, is not only a token of truce and amity, but when poles or boughs are fet up on the other fide, it is a fign the truce is accepted. In these treaties, however, there is one principal thing to be regarded, that neither party come beyond one another's three poles or boughs: fo that the middle space is not only secure, but is also allowed as a market for traffic and commerce: when the truce is thus accepted, they stick up their javelins and lances at the first poles, and come on unarmed; but, if any violence is offered, away they run to their poles, take up their weapons, and then the truce is at an end. This evening it happened that a greater number of people than usual, both men and women, traded among us for fuch toys as we had, with such great civility, that we made us a little tent of large boughs of trees, some of the men resolving to lie on shore all night: but, for my part, I and some others took our lodging in the boat, with boughs of trees spread over it, having a fail spread at the bottom to lie upon. About two o'clock in the morning we were awakened by the firing of muskets, and our men crying out for help, or get th felves ifland three killed us, th lying and, volle by th and t neph chor fent calle unha of th keep us, a of th ther amo the that bro her the ma the WO At Wit dea kne Th fta fto mi nig

die

Wa

an

OV

elle th

else they would all be murdered. Scarce had we time to get the boat ashore, when our men came plunging themselves into the water, with about four hundred of the islanders at their heels. We took up seven of the men, three of them very much wounded, and one left behind killed, while the enemy poured their arrows to thick among us, that we were forced to make a barricado, with boards lying at the fide of the boat, to thield us from danger; and, having got ready our fire-arms, we returned them a volley, which wounded feveral of them, as we could hear by their cries. In this condition we lay till break of day, and then making fignals of distress to the ship, which my nephew the captain heard and understood, he weighed anchor, and stood as near the shore as possible, and then fent another boat with ten hands in her to affift us; but we called to them not to come near, informing them of our unhappy condition. However, they ventured; when one of the men taking the end of a tow-line in one hand, and keeping our boat between him and our adversaries, swam to us, and slipping our cables, they towed us out of the reach of their arrows, and quickly after, a broadfide was given them from the ship, which made a most dreadful havock among them. When we got on board, we examined into the occasion of this fray? the men who sled informed us, that an old woman, who fold milk within the poles, had brought a young woman with her, who carried roots or herbs, the fight of whom fo much tempted our men, that they offered rudeness to the maid, at which the old woman fet up a great cry; nor would the failors part with the prize, but carried her among the trees, while the old woman went, and brought a whole army down upon them. At the beginning of the attack, one of our men was killed with a lance, and the fellow who began the mischief, paid dear enough for his mistress, though as yet we did not know what had become of him; the rest luckily escaped. The third night after the action, being curious to understand how affairs stood, I took the supercargo, and twenty fout fellows with me, and landed about two hours before midnight, at the same place where those Indians stood the night before, and there we divided our men into two bodies, the boatswain commanding one, and I another. It was to dark, that we could fee nobody, neither did we hear any voice near us: but by and by the boatswain falling over a dead body, we agreed to halt till the moon should

who the for to.

ned, nerno

illed

gafand lanind, hey

rtly ip's orld uld.

ily.
ing
un-

the-

one me the

irit

it oth

ent lie ers

ad n.

or.

rise, which we knew would be in an hour after. We perceived here no fewer than two and thirty bodies upon the ground, whereof two were not quite dead. Satisfied with this discovery, I was for going on board again; but the boatswain and the rest told me, they would make a visit to the Indian town, where those dogs, so they called them, refided, asking me at the same time to go along with them; for they did not doubt, beside's getting a good booty, but they should find Tom Jeffery there, for that was the unhappy man we missed. But I utterly refused to go, and commanded them back, being unwilling to hazard their lives, as the fafety of the ship wholly depended upon them. Notwithstanding all I could say to them, they all left me but one, and the supercargo; so we three returned to the boat, where a boy was left, refolving to flay till they returned. At parting I told them I supposed most of them would run the same fate with Tom Jeffery. To this they replied, "Come boys, come along, we'll warrant we'll come off fafe enough:" and so away they went, notwithflanding all my admonitions, either concerning their own fafety, or the preservation of the ship. Indeed, they were gallantly armed, every man having a musket, bayonet, and a pistol, besides cutlasses, hangers, pole-axes, and hand They came to a few Indian houses at first, granades. which not being the town they expected, they went farther, and finding a cow tied to a tree, they concluded that she would be a sufficient guide, and so it proved; for, after they untied her, she led them directly to the town, which confisted of above two hundred houses, several families living in some of the huts together. At their arrival, all being in a profound fleep, the failors agreed to divide themfelves into three bodies, and fet three parts of the town on fire at once, to kill those that were escaping, and plunder the rest of the houses. Thus desperately resolved, iney went to work : but the first party had not gone far, before they called out to the rest, that they had found Tom Jeffery; whereupon they all ran up to the place, and found the poor fellow indeed hanging up naked by one arm, and his throat cut almost from ear to ear: In a house that was hard by the tree they found fixteen or seventeen Indians, who had been concerned in the fray, two or three of them being wounded, who were not gone to sleep: this house they set on fire first, and in a few minutes after, five of f places more in the town appeared in flames. The cr nfla-

grati and c habit they killed ed, a threv made them in th them neve they fait e bodie their reme Hagr the c the r hear in d afhor grea but 1 gued of th and decl his I help folve dere then fure! difm

Dro man T

thre the mor per-

the

with

the

it to

em,

em;

but

un-

and

heir

em.

me

the

re-

nem

hey

e'll

ith-

nwo

ere

and

and

rft,

er,

fhe

fter

ich

iv-

be-

m-

on

der

ney

fore

ef-

and

ind

vas

ns,

em

ile

fla-

gration spread like wild fire, their houses being all of wood, and covered with flags or rushes. The poor affrighted inhabitants endeavoured to run out to fave their lives, but they were driven back into the flames by the failors, and killed without mercy. At the first house above mentioned, after the boatswain had slain two with his pole-ax, he threw a hand-granado into the house, which bursting, made a terrible havock, killing and wounding most of them; and their king and most of his train, who were then in that house, fell victims to their fury, every creature of them being either smothered or burnt. All this while they never fired a gun, lest the people should awaken faster than they could overpower them. But the fire awakened them fast enough, which obliged our fellows to keep together in bodies. By this time the whole town was in a flame, yet their fury rather increased, calling out to one another to remember Tom Jeffery. The terrible light of this conflagration made me very uneasy, and roused my nephew the captain, and the rest of his men, who knew nothing of When he perceived the dreadful smoke, and heard the guns go off, he readily concluded his men were in danger; he therefore takes another boat, and comes ashore himself, with thirteen men well armed. He was greatly surprised to see me and only two men in the boat, but more so when I told him the story; but though I argued with him, as I did with the men, about the danger of the voyage, the interests of the merchants and owners, and the fafety of the ship, yet my nephew, like the rest, declared, that he would rather lose the ship, his voyage, his life, and all, than his men should be lost for want of help: and so away he went. For my part, seeing him refolved to go, I had not power to stay behind. He ordered the pinnace back again for twelve men more, and then we marched directly as the flame guided us. But durely never was fuch a scene of horror beheld, or more dismal cries heard, except when Oliver Cromwell took Drogheda in Ireland, where he neither spared man, woman, nor child.

The first object, I think, we met with, was the ruins of one of their habitations, before which lay four men and three women killed, and two more burnt to death among the fire, which was now decaying. Nothing could appear more barbarous than this revenge; none more cruel than

of

eig

ter

cri

tin

fol

an

for

fla

go

WE

th

bo

te

w

gr

fa

th

dr

te

pi

th

CE

hi

m

ar

ti

n

W

OI

ne

A

al

th

fe

d

the authors of it. As we went on, the fire increased, and the cry proceded in proportion. We had not gone much farther, when we beheld three naked women, followed by fixteen or seventeen men, flying with the greatest swiftness from our men, who shot one of them in our fight. they perceived us, whom they supposed also their murderers, they fet up a most dreadful shriek, and both of them fwooned away in the fright. This was a fight which might have foftened the hardest heart: and in pity, we took some ways to let them know we would not hurt them, while the poor creatures with bended knees, and lifted up hands, made piteous lamentations to us to fave their lives. dered our men not to hurt any of the poor creatures whatfoever; but being willing to understand the occasion of all this, I went among these unhappy wretches, who neither understood me, nor the good I meant them. However, being resolved to put an end to this barbarity, I ordered the men to follow me. We had not gone fifty yards before we came up with the boatswain, with four of our men at his heels, all of them covered with blood and dust, and in fearch of more people to fatiate their vengeance. As foon as we saw them, we called out, and made them understand who we were; upon which they came up to us, fetting up a holloo of triumph, in token that more help was come. "Noble Captain," faid he to my nephew, "I'm glad you're come: we have not half done with these villainous hellhound dogs, we'll root out the very nation of them from the earth, and kill more than poor Tom has hairs upon his head: and thus he went on till I interrupted him. "Blood thirsty dog," faid I, "will your cruelty never end? I charge you touch not one creature more; stop your hands, and stand still, or you're a dead man this moment." "Why Sir," faid he, " you neither knew whom you are protecting, nor what they have done: but pray come hither, and behold an instance of compassion, if such can merit your clemency;" and with that he shewed me the poor fellow with his throat cut, hanging upon the tree.

Indeed, here was enough to fill their breasts with rage, which, however, I thought had gone too far, agreeable to these words of Jacob to his sons Simeon and Levi: "Cursed be their anger, for it was sierce; and their wrath, for it was cruel." But this sight made my nephew and the rest as bad as they: nay, my nephew declared, his concern was only for his men; as for the people not a soul

of them ought to live. Upon this, the boatswain and eight more directly turned about, and went to finish the intended tragedy; which being out of my power to prevent, I returned back from the difmal fight, and the piteous cries of those unfortunate creatures, who were made victims to their fury. Indeed, it was an egregious piece of folly in me to return to the boat with but one attendant; and I had very near paid for it, having narrowly escaped forty armed Indians, who had been alarmed by the conflagration; but having passed the place where they stood, I got to the boat, accompanied with the supercargo, and so went on board, fending the pinnace back again, to affift the men in what might happen. When I had got to the boat, the fire was almost extinguished, and the noise abated: but I had scarce been half an hour on board the ship, when I heard another volley given by our failors, and a great smoke, which, as I afterwards found, was our men falling upon those houses and persons that stood between them and the sea: but here they spared the wives and children, and killed only the men, to the number of about fix-By the time they got to the shore, the teen or seventeen. pinnace and the ship's boat were ready to receive them, and they all got fafe on board, not a man of them having received the least hurt, except two, one of whom strained his foot, and the other burnt his hand a little; for they met with no refistance, the poor Indians being unprepared, amazed, and confounded.

I was extremely angry with every one of them, but particularly with the captain, who, instead of cooling the rage of the men, had prompted them on to further mischief: nor could he make me any other excuse, but, that as he was a man, he could not mafter his passions at the fight of one of his men so cruelly murdered. As for the rest, knowing they were not under my command, they took no notice of any anger; but rather boasted of their revenge. According to all their accounts, they killed or destroyed about 150 men, women, and children, besides burning the town to ashes. They took their companion Tom Jeffery from the tree, covered him with some of the ruins, and so left him. But, however, this action of our men might feem to them justifiable, yet I always openly condemned it with the appellation of the Massacre of Mada. gascar. For tho' the natives had flain this Jeffery, yet cer-

K

and uch by ness

hen

lerem ght me

ds, orat-

the

her er, red

ore at in

up ne.

om on m.

d? ds, hy

our ow

to urfor

on-

tainly he was the first aggressor, by attempting to violate the chastity of a young innocent woman, who ventured down to them, on the faith of the public capitulation, which was

m

to

inf

an

ca

the

WC

the

in

lo

tio

for Ca

no

lea

ab

of

th ta

th

ab

ou

da

m

W

to

ne

hi

m

to

m fa

be

th

fit

21

so treacherously broken.

While we were under fail, the boatswain would often defend this bloody action, by saying, that the Indians had broke the truce the night before, by shooting one of our men without just provocation: and what if the poor fellow had taken a little liberty with the wench, he ought not to have been murdered in so villainous a manner: and that they had acted nothing but what the divine laws commissioned to be done to such homicides. However, I was in the same mind as before, telling them that they were murderers, and bid him depend upon it that God would blast their voyage for such an unparalleled piece of barbarity.

When we came into the gulph of Persia, five of our men, who ventured on shore, were either killed or made slaves by the Arabians, the rest of them having scarce time to escape to their boat. This made me upbraid them asresh with the just retribution of Heaven for such actions; upon which the boatswain very warmly asked me, "Whether those men on whom the tower of Siloam fell, were greater finners than the rest of the Galileans?" and besides, "Sir," faid he, " none of these five poor men that are lost, were with us at the massacre of Madagascar, as you call it, and therefore your reprehension is very unjust, and your application improper. Besides," added he, " you are continually using the men very ill upon this account, and being but a passenger yourself, we are not obliged to bear it; nor can we tell what evil defigns you may have to bring us to judgment for it in England; and, therefore, if you do not leave this discourse, as also not concern yourself with any of our affairs, I will leave the ship, and not sail among such dangerous company."

All this I heard very patiently; but, it being often repeated, I at length told him, the concern I had on board was none of his business; that I was a considerable owner in the ship, and therefore had a right to speak in common, and that I was no way accountable to him, nor to any body else. As no more passed for some time after, I thought all had been over. At this time we were in the road of Bengal, where, going on shore with the supercargo, one day, in the evening, as I was preparing to go on board, one of the

te

m

25

...

d

ır

1-

t

it

6

n

-

ft

1,

25

0

h

n

r

7

"

e

d

-

g

r

0

t

Y

h

d

f

men came to me, and told me, I need not trouble myself to come to the boat, for that the cockswain and others had ordered him not to carry me on board any more. insolent message much surprised me; yet I gave him no answer to it, but went directly and acquainted the supercargo, entreating him to go on board, and, by acquainting the Captain with it, prevent the mutiny which I perceived would happen. But before I had spoken this, the matter was effected on board; for no sooner was he gone off in the boat, but the boatswain, gunner, carpenter, and all the inferior officers, came to the quarter-deck, defiring to speak with the Captain; and there the boatswain made a long harangue, exclaiming against me, as before mentioned, that, if I had not gone on shore peaceably, for my own diversion, they, by violence, would have compelled me for their fatisfaction: that as they had shipped with the Captain, so they would faithfully serve him; but, if I did not quit the ship, or the Captain oblige me to it, they would leave the ship immediately; hereupon, turning his face about by way of fignal, they all cried out, "ONE and ALL, ONE and ALL."

You may be fure, that though my nephew was a man of great courage, yet he could not but be furprifed at their fudden and unexpected behaviour; and, though he talked stoutly to them, and afterwards expostulated with them, that in common justice to me, who was a confiderable owner in the ship, they could not turn me as it were out of my own house, which might bring their lives in danger, should they ever be taken in England; nay, though he invited the boatswain on shore to accommodate matters with me; yet all this I say signified nothing; they would have nothing to do with me; and they were refolved " Well," faid my to go on shore if I came on board. nephew, " if you are so resolved, permit me to talk with him, and then I have done; and so he came to me, giving me an account of their resolution, how one and all designed to forfake the ship when I came on board, for which he was mightily concerned. "I am glad to fee you, nephew," faid, I, " and rejoice it is no worfe, fince they have not rebelled against you; I only defire you to fend my necessary things on shore, with a sufficient sum of money, and I will find my way to England as well as I can." Though this grieved my nephew to the heart, yet there was no remedy but compliance; in short, all my necessaries were sent me, and so this matter was over in a few hours.

S

ti

V

2

fr

m

al

fo

n

fo

W

. 6

C

tl

th

E

fà

th

fo

V

r

tl

W

1

t

tl

e

I think I was now near a thousand leagues farther off England by sea, than at my little kingdom, except this difference, that I might travel by land over the Great Mogul's country to Surat, from thence to Bassora, by sea up the Persian gulph, then take the way of the caravans over the Arabian desert to Aleppo and Scanderoon, there take shipping to Italy, and so travel by land into France, and

from thence cross the sea to England.

My nephew left me two persons to attend me; one of them was his fervant, and the other clerk to the purfer, who engaged to be mine. I took lodgings in an English woman's house, where several French, one English, and two Italian merchants refided. The handsome entertainment I met with here, occasioned me to stay nine months confidering what course I should take. Some English goods I had with me of great value, befides a thousand pieces of eight, and a letter for more, if there was such necessity. The goods I foon disposed of to advantage, and bought here feveral good diamonds, which I could easily carry about with me. One morning the English merchant came to me, as being very intimate together, " Countryman," faid he, " I have a project to communicate to you, which I hope will fuit to both our advantage. To be short, Sir, we are both in a remote part of the world from our country; but yet in a place where men of business may get a great deal of money. Now, if you will put a thousand pounds to my thousand pounds, we will hire a ship to our satisfaction: you shall be Captain, I will be merchant; and we'll go a trading voyage to China, for why should we lie still like drones, while the whole world is in a continual motion."

This proposal soon got my consent, being very agreeable to my rambling genius; and the more so, because I looked upon my countryman to be a very sincere person; it required some time before we could get a vessel to our mind, and sailors to man it accordingly; at length we bought a ship, and got an English mate, boatswain, and gunner, a Dutch carpenter, and three Portuguese foremast-men; and, for want of others, made shift with Indian seamen. We first sailed to Achin, in the island of Sumatra, and then to Siam, where we bartered our wares for some arack and opium, the last of which bore a great price among the Chinese; in a word, we went up to

ent

off his

0-

up

er

ke

nd

of

r,

fh

10

nt

n-

ds

of

y .

h-t

y

C

2.

h

r,

-

a

d

r

d

11

-

I

r

e

d

f

5

t

Suskan, making a very great voyage; and after eight months time, I returned to Bengal, very well satisfied with this adventure, having not only got a sufficient quantity of money, but an insight of getting a great deal more.

The next voyage my friend proposed to me, was to go among the Spice Islands, and bring home a load of cloves from the Manillas, or thereabouts, islands belonging partly to Spain, but where the Dutch trade very considerably. We were not long in preparing for this voyage, which we made no less successful than the last, touching at Borneo, and several other places which I do not perfectly remember, and returning home in about five months time. We soon sold our spices, which were chiefly cloves and some nutmegs, to the Persian merchants, who carried them away for the gulph; and, in short, making sive to one advantage, we were loaded with money.

Not long after my friend and I had made up our accounts, to our entire satisfaction, there came in a Dutch coafter from Batavia, of about two hundred tons. crew of this vessel pretended themselves so sickly, that there were not hands sufficient to undertake a voyage; and the Captain having given out that he intended to go to Europe, public notice was given that the ship was to be No fooner did this come to our ears, but we bought the ship, paid the master, and took possession. We would also have very willingly entertained some of the men: but they having received their share of booty, were not to be found, being altogether fled to Agra, the great city of the Mogul's residence; and from thence were to travel to Surat, and so by sea to the Persian gulf. And indeed they had reason to fly in this manner; for the truth of it was, the pretended Captain was the gunner only, and not the commander: that having been on a trading voyage, they were attacked on shore by the Malayans, who killed three men, and the Captain; after whose death the other eleven men run away with the ship to the bay of Bengal, and left the mate and five men more on shore; but of this affair we shall have occasion to speak more at length hereafter.

However they came by the ship, we thought we bought it honestly; neither did we suspect any thing of the matter; when the man shewed us a bill of sale for the ship (undoubtedly forged) to one Emanuel Clostershoven, which name he went by. And so without any more to do, we

K 3

he

th

at

fo

ar

of

if

m

li

in

ti

h

ei

b

C

t

h

b

f

1

picked up some Dutch and English seamen, resolving for another voyage for cloves among the Philippine and Molucca Islands; in short, we continued thus five or six years, trading from port to port with extraordinary success; in the seventh year we undertook a voyage to China, designing to touch at Siam, and buy some rice by the way. In this voyage, contrary winds beat us up and down for a considerable time among the islands in the straits of Molucca. No sooner were we clear of those rugged seas, but we perceived our ship had sprung a leak, which obliged us to put into the river Cambodia, which lies northward of the gulph,

and goes up to Siam.

One day as I was on shore refreshing myself, there comes to me an Englishman, who was gunner's mate on board an English East India ship riding up the river near the city of Cambodia: "Sir," faid he, " you may wonder at my befiness, having never seen me in your life; but tho' I am a stranger, I have something to tell you that very nearly concerns you; and indeed it is the imminent danger you are in, has moved me to give you this timely notice." "Danger! faid I, " what danger? I know of none, except my ship being leaky, for which I design to have run aground to morrow morning." "I hope you will be better employed, when you shall hear what I have to fay to you. You know the town of Cambodia is about fifteen leagues up this river; about three leagues on this fide of it, there lie two Dutch and three English ships. And would you venture here without confidering what strength you have to engage them?" I knew not what he meant by this discourse, and turning short upon him, "Sir," said I, "I know no reason I have to be afraid either of any Dutch or English ships, I am no interloper, and what business have they with me?" "Well, Sir," faid the man, " if you do think yourfelf secure, all as I can fay, you must take your chance; however, I am very forry you are so deaf to good advice; but I assure you, if you do not put to sea immediately, you will be attacked by five long boats full of men, hanged yourfelf for a pirate, if you are taken, and the particulars examined afterwards." " I thought, Sir," added he, " I might have met a better reception for such a singular piece of service." "Sir," faid 1, "I was never ungrateful to any man; but pray explain yourself, and I'll go on board this minute, whether the leak be stopped or no." "Why, Sir," faid

for

Mo-

ars,

the

ing

this

nsi-

ca.

er-

put

ph,

ere-

on

ear

der

ho'

ery

ın-

10-

of

to.

ou

ve

nis

35.

at

he-

n,

id

r,

ry

if

d

e,

-

e

92

it

d

he, "to be short, because time is precious, the matter is this: You know well enough that you was with the ship at Sumatra, where your Captain was murdered by the Malayans, with three of his sailors; and that either you, or some who were on board you, ran away with the ship, and are since turned pirates at sea. Now, Sir, this is the sum of what I had to say; and I can positively assure you, that if you be taken, you will be executed without much ceremony; for undoubtedly you cannot but be sensible what little law merchant ships shew to pirates, whenever they fall into their hands."

"Sir," faid I, "I thank you for your kind information; and though, I am fure, no man could come more honestly by the ship than I have done, yet knowing their enterprize, and being satisfied of your honest intention, I'll be upon my defence." "Pr'ythee, Sir," said the man, "don't talk of being upon your desence, the best that you can make is to be out of danger; and therefore, if you have any regard for your life, and the lives of you men, take the advantage, without sail, of putting out to sea at high water; by which means, as you have a whole tide before you, you will be gone too far out of their reach be-

"I am mighty well fatisfied," faid I, "in this particular, and for your kindness, which merits my great esteem, pray, Sir, what amends shall I make you?" He replied, "I know not what amends you are willing to make, because you may have some doubts of its certainty: but, to convince you of the truth of what I say, I have one offer to make to you. On board one of the English ships, I have nineteen month pay due to me, and this Dutchman that is with me has seven months pay due to him, which if you will make good to us, we will go along with you. If you shall find, that there is nothing in what we have said, then we shall desire nothing: but, when you are convinced that we have saved the ship, your life, and the lives of the men, we will leave the whole to your generosity."

So reasonable did this every way appear, that I immediately consented, and we went directly on board. As soon as we came on board, my partner calls joyfully out, "That they had stopped the leak?" "Well, thank God," said I, "but pray let us weigh anchor, forthwith." Weigh!" said he, "what is the meaning of this hurry?" "Pray ask no questions," said I, "but all hands to work,

th

to

e

th

fi

without losing a moment's time:" Upon which, in great furprise, the Captain was called, who immediately ordered the anchor to be got up; and though the tide was not quite down, yet, being affisted with a little land breeze, we stood to fea. I then called my partner into the cabin, and related the Hory at large, which was confirmed and more amplified by the two men I had brought on board. Scarce had we finished our discourse upon this head, but a sailor came to the cabin door, with a message from the Captain, that we were chased by five sloops full of armed men. " Very well," faid I " it is plain now there is something in it. And so, going upon deck, I told all the men there was a defign for feizir g the ship, and of executing us for pirates; and asked them whether they would faithfully stand by us, and by one another?" To which they unanimously replied, " that they would fight to their last drop of blood." I then asked the Captain, which way he thought best for us to manage the battle? "Sir," faid he, "the only method is to keep them off with our great shot as long as we are able, and then have recourse to our small arms; and when both these fail us, then retire to close quarters, when perhaps the enemy, wanting materials, can neither break open our bulk heads, nor get in upon us." Mean time the gunner was ordered to bring two guns to bear fore and aft out of the steerage, and so load them with musket bullets and fmall pieces of old iron; and the deck being cleared we prepared for the engagement, still, however, keeping out The boats followed us with all the fail they could at fea. make, and we could perceive the two foremost were English, which outsailed the rest by two leagues, and which we found would come up with us: hereupon we fired a gun without ball, intimating that they should bring to, and we put out a flag of truce, as a fignal for parley; but finding them crowding after us, till they came within shot, we took in our white, and hanging out the red flag, immediately fired at them with ball: we then called to them with a speaking trumpet, bidding them at their peril keep off.

But all this fignified nothing; for depending upon the firength that followed them, they were resolutely bent for mischief: hereupon I ordered them to bring the ship to, by which means, they lying upon our broadside, we let sly at them at once, one of whom carried away the stern of the hindermost boat, and obliged them not only to take down

eat

red

ite

bod

re-

m-

ad

me

nat

ry

it.

a

s;

ıs,

d,

I

us

bc

re

en

r-

en

n-

ut

d

re

ut

d

e

n

e

gk

y

e

their fail, but made them all run to the head of the boat, to keep them from finking, and fo she lay by, having enough of it. In the mean time, we prepared to welcome the foremost boat in the same manner. While we were doing this, one of the three hindermost boats came up to the relief of that which was disabled, and took the men out of We again called to parley with them; but, instead of an answer, one of the boats came close under our stern; whereupon our gunner let fly his two chase guns, but misfing, the men in the boat shouted, and waving their caps, came on with greater fury. To repair this feeming difgrace, the gunner foon got ready, and, firing the fecond time, did a great deal of mischief among the enemy. We waved again, and, bringing our quarter to bear upon them, fired three guns more, when we found the boat a finking, and several men already in the sea; hereupon, manning our pinnace, I gave orders to fave as many as they could, and instantly to come on board, because the rest of their boats we approaching: accordingly they did so, and took up three of them, one of whom was almost past recovery; and then crowding all the fail we could, after our men came on board, we stood out farther to sea, so that the other three boats gave over the chaie, when they came up to the Thus delivered from imminent danger, we first two. changed our course to the eastward, quite out of the course of all European ships.

Being now at sea, and inquiring more particularly of the two seamen, the meaning of all this, the Dutchman at once let us into the secret. He told us, that the fellow who sold us the ship was an errant thief, who had run away with her: that the Captain was treacherously murdered on the coast of Molucca by the natives there, with three of his men; that he, the Dutchman, and sour more, being obliged to have recourse to the woods for their safety, at length escaped by means of a Dutch ship, in its way to China, which had sent their boat on shore for fresh water: That, after this, he went to Batavia, where two of the seamen belonging to the ship (who had deserted the rest in their travels) arrived, and there gave an account that the fellow who ran away with the ship had sold her at Bengal to a set of pirates, who went a crusing, and had already taken one English and

two Dutch ships, richly laden,

Now though this was absolutely false, my partner truly faid, that our deliverance was to be esteemed so much the

more, by reason, had we fallen into their hands, we could have expected nothing from them but immediate death, confidering our accusers would have been our judges; and, therefore, his opinion was, to return directly to Bengal, where, being known, we could prove how honeftly we came by the ship, of whom we bought her, and the like, and where we were fure of some justice; at least would not be hanged first, and judged afterwards. I was at first of my partner's opinion; but when I had more feriously considered of the matter, I told him we ran a great hazard in attempting to return, being on the wrong fide of the straits' of Molucca, and that if, upon alarm given, we should be taken by the Dutch at Batavia, or English elsewhere, our running away would be a sufficient evidence to condemn us. This danger indeed flartled not only my partner, but likewife all the ship's company; so we changed our former refolution, and refolved to go to the coast of Tonquin, and so to that of China, where, pursuing our first design as to trade, we might likewife have an opportunity to dispose of the ship some way or other, and to return to Bengal in any country veffel we could procure. This being agreed to, we steered away N. N. E. about co leagues off the usual course to the east, which put us to some inconveniences. As the wind blew steadily against us, our voyage became more tedicus, and we began to be afraid of want of provision; and what was still worse, we apprehended, that as those ships, from whose boats we had escaped, were bound to China, they might get before us, and have given fresh information, which might create another vigorous pursuit. Indeed, I could not help being grieved, when I confidered that I who had never wronged or defrauded any person in my life, was now purfued like a common thief; and, if taken, to run the greatest danger of being executed as such; and, though innocent, I found myfelf under the necessity of Aying for my fafety; and thereby escape being brought to shame, of which I was even more afraid than of death itself. It was easy to read my dejection in my countenance. My mind was oppressed, like those unhappy innocent persons, who, being overpowered by blasphemous and perjured evidences, wickedly resolved to take away their lives, or ruin their reputation, have no other recourse in this world to cafe their forrow, but fighs, prayers, and tears. My partner feeing me so concerned, encouraged me as well as he could;

and, after describing to me the several ports of that coast, he told me, he would either put me in on the coast of Cochinchina, or else in the bay of Tonquin, from whence we might go to Macao, a town once possessed by the Portuguese, and where still many European families resided.

uld

th,

nd,

ral,

me

ind

be

ny

er-

at-

its!

be

ur

35 ..

e-

e-

10

to

of

IV

0,

al

13

re

;

fe.

0

t.

d

n

....

0

To this place we steered, and, early next morning, came in fight of the coast; but thought it adviseable to put into a small river where we could, either over land, or by the ship's pinnace, know what vessels were in any ports thereabouts. This happy step proved our deliverance; for, next morning, there came to the bay of Tonquin two Dutch ships, and a third, without any colours; and in the evening, two English ships steered the same course. The river where we were was but small, and run but a few leagues up the country northward; the country was wild and barbarous, and the people thieves, having no correspondence with any other nation, dealing only in fift, oil, and fuch grofs commodities; and one barbarous custom they still retained, that when any vessel was unhappily shipwrecked upon their coast, they make the men prisoners or slaves; so that now we might fairly fay we were furrounded by enemies both by fea and land.

As the ship had been leaky, we took the opportunity, in this place, to fearch her, and to stop up the places which let in the water. We accordingly lightened her, and bringing our guns and other moveable things to one fide, we effayed to bring her down, that we might come to her bottom: but, upon second consideration, we did not think it fafe to let her lie on dry ground, neither indeed was the place convenient for it. The inhabitants, not used to such a fight as to fee a ship lie down on one fide, and heel in towards the shore, and not perceiving her men, who were at work on her bottom, with stages and boats on the off side, presently imagined the ship had been cast away, and lay fast on the ground. Agreeable to this supposition, they furrounded us with ten or twelve large boats, with a refolution, undoubtedly, to plunder the ship, and to carry away those they found alive for slaves to their king. But when they perceived our men hard at work on the ship's bottom and fide, washing, graving, and stopping her, it filled them all with fuch furprise, that they stood gazing as though they were confounded. Nor could we imagine what their defign was; however, for fear of danger, we handed down arms and ammunition to those at work, in order to defend

m

th

T

10

ec

in

0

u

h

th

f

d

b

themselves; and, indeed, this precaution was absolutely necessary; for, in a quarter of an hour after, the natives, concluding it was really a shipwreck, and that we were saving our lives and goods, which they thought belonged to them, came down upon our men, as though it had been in line of battle. We lay at present but in a very unfit posture so fight; and before the stages could be got down, or the men in the boat come on board as they were ordered, the Cochinchineses were upon them, and two of their boats boarding our long-boat, they began to lay hold of our men as prisoners. The first they seized was a stout English failor, who never fired his musket, like a fool as I imagined, but laid it down in the boat: but he knew what he was doing; for, by main force he dragged the Pagan out of the boat into ours by the two ears, and knocked his brains out against the boat's gunnel: a Dutchman that was next him fnatched up the musket, and knocked down five more with the butt-end of it; however, this was doing very little to their number; but a strange unexpected accident, which rather merits laughter than any thing else, gave our men a complete victory over them.

It feems the carpenter, who was preparing to grave the outfide of the ship, as well as to pay the seams, where he caulked to stop the leaks, had gotten two kettles just let down in the boat, one filled with boiling pitch, and the other with rosin, tallow, oil, and such stuff as the shipwrights use: the carpenter's man had a great iron ladle with which he used to supply the workmen with hot stuff, and as two of the enemies entered the boat where the fellow flood, he faluted them with a full ladle of the hot boiling liquor, which, the poor creatures being half naked, made them roar out, and jump into the fea. "Well done Jack," fays the earpenter, " give them the other dose:" and so stepping forward himself, takes a mop, and dipping it into the pitch-pot, he and his man so plentifully flung it among them, as that none escaped being scalded; upon which they all made the best of their way, crying and howling in such a frightful manner, that, in all my adventures, I never heard the like. And, indeed, never was I better pleased with any conquest than I was with this, there being so little bloodshed, and having an aversion to killing fuch favage wretches, (more than was necessary) as knowing they came on errands, which their laws and customs ly

S,

ato

in

re

ne

ts

h

ı,

)-

e

it

n

0

-

2

e

e

made them think were just and equitable. By this time, all things being in order, and the ship swimming, they found their mistake, so they did not venture a second attack. Thus ended our merry fight; and, having got rice, bread, roots, and fixteen good hogs, on board the day before we fet fail, not daring to go into the bay of Tonquin, but steered N. E. towards the isle of Formosa, or as tho' we would go to the Manillas, or Philippine islands, for fear of meeting with any European ships; when we anchored at the isle of Fermosa, the inhabitants not only courteously supplied us with provisions and fresh water, but dealt very fairly and honestly with us in their bargains and agreements. From this place we steered north, keeping still off the coast of China, till we were beyond all its ports where European ships usually come; and, at length, being come to the latitude of thirty degrees, we resolved to put into the first trading port we should come at; and standing for the shore, a boat came off two leagues to us, with an old Portuguese pilot on board, who offered his service; we very gladly accepted him, and fent the boat back again. And now, having the old man on board, I talked to him of going to Nanquin, the most northward part of the coast of China. "What will you do there?" faid he, smiling. "I told him we would fell our cargo, and purchase calicoes, raw and wrought filks, tea, &c. and fo return the same way back." "O," said he, " you had better put in at Macao, where you may buy China wares as cheap as at Nanquin, and fell your opium at a greater advance." " But," faid I, we are gentlemen, as well as merchants, and defign to fee the great city of Pekin, and the magnificent court of the monarch of China." "Why, then," faid he, " you should go to Ningpo, where there is a navigable river that goes through the heart of that wast empire, two hundred and seventy leagues from the sea, which crosses all the rivers, passes considerable hills, by the help of the sluices and gates, and goes even up to the city of Pekin. You may go to Nanquin, if you please, and travel to Pekin, and there is a Dutch ship just before bound that way." At the name of a Dutch or English ship, I was struck with confusion; they being as great a terror to me in this vessel, as an Algerine man of war is to them in the Mediterranean. The old man finding me troubled, "Sir," said he, " I hope the Dutch are not now at war with your nation." " No," faid I, " but God knows what liberty they may

tv

21

tr

V

W

fe

b

f

t

1

C

I

t

take when cut of the reach of the law." "Why," fays he, "what occasion is there for peaceable merchants to fear? For, believe me, they never meddle with any but PIRATES."

At the mentioning the word pirates, my countenance turned to that of scarlet; nor was it possible for me to conceal it from the old pilot; who taking notice of it, "Sir," said he, "take what course you please, I'll do you all the service I can." "Seignior," said I, "I am a little concerned at your mentioning pirates; I hope there are none such in these seas, because you see in what weak condition we are to defend ourselves." "O, Sir," said he, "if that's all, don't be concerned, I don't remember one in these seas these sistem years, except about a month ago one was seen in the bay of Siam, but she is gone to the southward; neither was she built for a privateer, but was run away with by a reprobate Captain, and some of his men, the right Captain having been murdered by the Malayans."

"What!" faid I, (as though ignorant of what had happened) "did they kill the Captain?" No," faid he, it is generally thought the Malayans murdered him; but perhaps they might procure them to do it, and therefore they justly deserve hanging. The rogues were lately discovered in the bay of Siam, in the river of Cambodia, by some Dutchinen who belonged to the ship, and had much ado to escape the five boats that pursued them, but they have solemnly sworn to give no quarter to the Captain or the seamen, but hang them every one up at the yard arm, without any formal business of bringing them to a court of

Being sensible, that, having the old man on board, he was incapable of doing me any mischief, "Well, Seignior," said I, "it is for this very reason I would have you carry us up to Nanquin, where neither English nor Dutch ships come: and I must tell you, their Captains are a parcel of rash, proud, insolent rascals, that neither know what belongs to justice, nor how to behave themselves as the laws of God or nature direct: fellows that would prove murderers to punish robbers, and take upon them to adjudge innocent men to death, without any proof to prove them guilty; but perhaps I may live to call them to account for it, in a place where they may be taught how justice is to be executed." And so I told him all the story of buying the ship, and how we were saved by the means of

two men: that the murder of the Captain by the Malayans, as also the running away with the ship, I believe to be true; but that we, who bought it, were turned pirates, was a mere siction, to cover their cowardice and soolish behaviour, when they attacked us, and the blood of those men we killed in our own just defence, lay at their door, who

fent to attack us by furprife.

ays

to

but

nce

on-

r,"

the

on-

ne

on

t's

efe

as

d;

th

ht

p-

e,

ut

re

1-

y

h

y

rc

1,

of

e

u

h

V

3

e

-

" Sir," faid the old man amazed, " you have taken the right course to steer to the north, and, if I might advise you, I would have you fell your ship in China, and buy or build another in that country; and I'll procure people to buy the one and fell the other." "Well, but, Seignior," faid I, " if I fell the ship in this manner, I may bring fome innocent persons into the same danger as I have gone through, perhaps worse, even death itself, whereby I should be as guilty of their murder as their villainous executioners." "That need not trouble you," fays the old man, "I'll find a way to prevent that; for these commanders you talk of I know very well, and will inform them rightly of the matter as you have related, and I am persuaded they will not only believe me, but act more cautiously for the future." " And will you deliver one meffage from me to them?" "Yes," faid he, "if you will give it under your hand, that I may prove it is not of my own production." Hereupon I wrote a large account of their attacking me in their long boat, the pretended reafon and unjust design of it; that they had done what they might be ashamed of and could not answer for at any tribunal in England. But this letter was writ in vain. vidence ordered things another way. We failed directly for Nanquin, and in about thirteen days fail, came to an anchor at the fouth-west point of the great gulph of that place, where we learned, that two Dutch ships were gone the length before us, and that we should certainly fall into their hands. We were all at a great loss in this exigency, and would very gladly have been on shore almost any where; but our old pilot told me, that if I would fail to the fouthward about two and forty leagues, there was a little port called Quinchange, where no European ships ever came, and where we might consider what was further to be done. Accordingly we weighed anchor the next day, calling only twice on shore by the way to get fresh water. The country people very courteously fold us roots, tea, rice, fowls, and other provisions. After five

of a

yet

was it f

the

the

hin

to

wil

an

Pa

ing

m

pa

no

as

re

in

tic

ne

ar

th

W

ſ

W

to

0

N

t

h

days fail we came to the port, and landed with unspeakable joy. We resolved to dispose of ourselves and effects in any other way possible, than enter on board that ill-fated vessel more; for no state can be more miserable than a continued fear, which is a life of death, a confounder of our understandings, that fets the imagination at work to form a thoufand frightful things that may never happen. And we scarce flept one night, without dreaming of halters, yardarms, or gibbets, of fighting, being taken, and being killed: nay, so violent were our apprehensions, that we would bruife our hands and heads against the sides of the cabin, as though actually engaged. The flory of the Dutch cruelty at Amboyna, often came into our thoughts when awake; and, for my part, I thought my condition very hard, that after so many difficulties, and such signal deliverances, I should be hanged in my old age, though innocent of any crime that deferved fuch punishment; but then religion would feem to represent to me, as though the voice of it had faid, confider, O man! what fins you have been formerly guilty of; which now thou art called to an account for, to expiate with thy blood! And as to thy innocence, what art thou more innocent than thy bleffed Redeemer Jesus Christ, who suffered for thy offences, and to whose providence you ought to submit, let what will happen? After this, natural courage would inspire me to refift to the last drop of blood, and sooner die than suffer myfelf to be taken by boorish, rascally Dutchmen, who had arts to torment beyond death itself.

But now, thank kind Heaven, being ashore, our old pilot procured us a lodging and a warehouse for our goods; it was a little hut with a large warehouse joining to it, all built with canes, and pallisadoed round with large ones, to keep out pilfering thieves, which are very numerous in that The magistrates allowed us a little guard during the night, and we employed a centinel with a kind of halbert for three pence a day. The fair, or mart, we found, had been over for some time; however, there remained in the river four junks and two Japan ships, the merchants of the latter being on shore. In the first place, our old pilot brought us acquainted with the missionary Roman priests, who were converting the people to Christianity: two of them were referved, rigid, and austere, applying themselves to the work they came about with great earnestness; but the third, who was a Frenchman, called Father Simon, was

ble

ffel

red

er-

u-

We

d-

llld

in,

ch.

en

ry

e-

n-

ut

he

ve:

ın

1-

-

0

)-

-

d

1

0

t

of a freer conversation, not seemingly so serious and grave, yet no worse Christian than the other two, one of whom was a Portuguese, and the other a Genoese. Father Simon, it feems, was appointed to go to Pekin, the royal feat of the Emperor of the Chinese; and he only waited for another priest, who was ordered from Macao to accompany We never met together, but he was prompting me to accompany him in that journey: "Sir," faid he, "I will shew you the glorious things of this mighty empire, and a city, the city of Pekin, far exceeding London and Paris, put them both together. One day in particular, being at dinner with him, I shewed some inclination to go; which made him press the more upon me and my partner, to gain our perfect consent. " But, Father Simon," faid my partner, " what satisfaction can you have in our company whom you efteem as heretics, and consequently objects not worthy your regard?" "O," faid he, "you may be as good Catholics in time as those I hope to convert to our religion." "And fo" faid I, "we shall have you preaching to us all the way, instead of pleasing us with a description of the country." " Sir," fasd he, " however our religion may be villified by some people, it is very certain it neither divests us of good manners or Christian charity; and as we are gentlemen, as such we may converie together, without making one another uneafy."

But we shall leave him awhile, to consider our ship and the merchandise which we had to dispose of. There was but very little trade in the place where we were; and I was once refolved to venture to fail to the river Kilam, and to to the city of Nanquin: but Providence ordered it otherwife, by our old pilot's bringing a Japan merchant to us, to see what goods we had. He immediately bought our opium, for which he gave us a very good price in gold by weight, some wedges of which were about ten or eleven ounces. It came into my head that perhaps he might buy the ship too; and I ordered his interpreter to propose it to him. He faid nothing then, but shrugged up his shoulders; yet in a few days after he came accompanied by a missionary priest, who was his interpreter, with this proposal, "That as he had bought a great quantity of our goods, he had not money enough to purchase our ship; but if I pleased he would hire her, with all my men, to go to Japan, and from thence with another loading to the Philippine

ma

or

and

we

fev

we

N

the

ftr

OU

th

fa

fh

ft.

P

n

islands, the freight of both which he would very willingly pay to us before; and at their return to Japan, would buy the ship." Upon this we asked the Captain and his men, if they were willing to go to Japan; to which they unanimoully agreed. While this was in agitation, the young man my nephew left to attend me, told me, "That as I did not care to accept this prospect of advantage, he would manage it for me as I pleased, and render me a faithful account of his fuccess, which would be wholly mine." Indeed I was very unwilling to part with him; but confidering it might be for the young man's good, I discoursed with my partner about it, who, of his own generofity, gave him his share of the vessel, so that I could do no otherwise than give him mine: but, however, we let him have but the proper of half of it, and preferved a power, that when we met in England, if he had obtained success, he should account to us for one half of the profits of the ship's freight, and the other should be his own. Thus having taken a writing under his hand, away he failed to Japan, where the merchant dealt very honestly by him, got him a licence to come on shore, sent him loaded to the Philippines with a Japanese supercargo, from whence he came back again loaded with European goods, cloves, and other spiceries. By this voyage he cleared a confiderable fum of money, which determined him not to fell his ship, but to trade on his own account: so he returned to the Manillas, where, getting acquaintance, he made his ship free, was hired by the governor privately to go to Acapulco in America, on the Mexican coast, with a licence to travel to the great city of Mexico. This traffic turned out greatly to account, and my friend finding means to get to Jamaica, returned nine years after exceedingly rich into England.

In parting with the ship, it comes in course to consider of those men who had saved our lives when in the river of Cambodia; and though, by the way they were a couple of rogues, who thought to turn pirates themselves, yet we paid them what they had before demanded, and gave each of them a small sum of money, making the Englishman a gunner, and the Dutchman a boatswain, with which they

were very well contented

We were now about 1000 leagues farther from home, than when at Bengal. All the comfort we could expect was, that their being another fair to be kept in a month's time, we might not only purchase all sorts of that country's gly

buy

ien,

mi-

ung

is I

uld

ac-

In-

er-

ith

im

lan

the

we

ac-

nt,

2

he

to

a

un.

28.

y,

on.

e,

Dy.

on

ty

it,

bs

er

of

le

e

h

a

y

S

S

manufactures, but very possibly find some Chinese junks, or vessels from Tonquin, to be fold, which would carry us and our goods wherefoever we pleafed. Upon these hopes, we resolved to continue; and, to divert ourselves, we took several little journies in the country. About ten days after we parted with our ship, we travelled to see the city of Nanquin. This city lies in latitude 30 degrees north of the line: it is regularly built, and the streets are exactly firaight, and cross one another in direct lines, which sets it out to the greatest advantage. At our return, we found the priest was come from Macao, that was to accompany father Simon to Pekin. That father earnestly solicited me to accompany him, and I referred him to my partner. In short, we both agreed, and prepared accordingly; and we were fo lucky as to have liberty to travel among the retinue of one of their Mandarins, who is a principal magistrate, and much reverenced by the people.

We were five and twenty days travelling thro' this miferable country, infinitely populous, but as indifferently cultivated: and yet their pride is infinitely greater than their poverty, infomuch that the priests themselves derided them. As we passed by the house of one of their country gentlemen, two leagues off Nanquin, we had the honour forsooth to ride with the Chinese squire about two miles. Never was Don Quixote so exactly imitated! Never such a com-

pound of pomp and poverty feen before!

His habit, made of calico, was dirty, greafy, and very proper for a Merry Andrew or Scaramouch, with all its tawdry trappings, as hanging fleeves, taffels, &c. though torn and rent in almost every part: his vest underneath it was no less dirty, but more greafy, resembling the most exquifite floven or greafy butcher: His horse (worse than Rosinante, or the famous steed of doughty Hudibras) was a poor. starved decripid thing, that would not fell for thirty shillings in England: and yet this piece of worshipful pomp was attended with ten or twelve flaves, who guarded their mafter to his country-feat. We stopped at a little village for refreshment; and when we came by the country-leat of this great man, we found him fitting under a tree before his door, eating a mess of boiled rice, with a great piece of garlic in the middle, and a bag filled with green pepper by him, and another plant like ginger, together with a piece of lean mutton in it: this was his worship's regalt; but

pray observe the state of the food! two women slaves brought him his food, which being laid before him, two others appeared to perform their respective offices; one fed him with a spoon, while the other scraped off what fell upon his beard and tassety vest, and gave it to a particular favourite to eat. And thus we left the wretch pleased with the conceit of our admiring his magnificence, which rather merited our scorn and detestation.

At length we arrived at the great city of Pekin, accompanied by two fervants, and the old Portuguese pilot, whose charges we bore, and who ferved us as an interpreter by the way. We had scarce been a week at Pekin, but he comes laughing to us, " Ah! Seignior Inglife," faid he, " me something tell you make your heart glad, but make me forry: for you bring me here twenty-five days journey, and now you leave me go back alone; and which way shall I make my port after without de ship, without de horse, without pecune?" so he called money in his broken Latin. He then informed me, that there was a great caravan of Muscovite and Polish merchants in the city, who were preparing to fet out for Muscovy by land within fix weeks; and, that he was certain we would take this opportunity, and consequently that he must go home by himself. Indeed this news infinitely furprifed and pleafed me. " Are you certain of this?" faid I. "Yes, Sir," fays he, " me fure its true." And so he told me, that having met an old acquaintance of his, an Armenian in the street, who was among them, and who had come from Aftracan, with a defign to go to Tonquin, but for certain reasons having altered his refolutions, he was now refolved to go with the caravan, and to return by the river Wolga to A-"Well, Seignior," faid I, "don't be discontented about your returning alone; and, if by this means I can find a passage to England, it will be your own fault if you return to Macao at all." And fo consulting with my partner what was best to be done, he referred it to me as I pleased, having our affairs so well settled at Bengal, that, if he could convert the good voyage he had made in China filks, wrought or raw, he would be fatisfied to go to England, and so return to Bengal in the Company's ships. Thus resolved, we agreed that if our pilot would go with us, we would bear his charges either to Moscow, or England; and to give him in a present the sum of one hundred and seventy pounds sterling. Hereupon we called

fhore pec we fible adve on he good tell

htm

ha ch nin oth Pe an ca

ma

mo

ho ar w

A

ip

o ti ko c P c C h

h

ghe

ap-

him

his

rite

on-

ne-

m-

ofe

by

he

he,

ike

ey,

vay

de

cen

ca-

ho

fix

or-

elf.

ne.

ys.

ng

et,

in,

go

1-

n-

ns

ılt

th

ne

al,

in

to

s.

th.

d

him in, and told him the cause of his complaint should be removed, if he would accompany us with the caravans; and, therefore, we defired to know his mind. At this he shook his head, "Great long journey," said he, "me no pecune, carry me to Moscow, or keep me there." But we soon put him out of that concern, by making him sensible of what we would give him here to lay out to the best advantage; and, as for his charges, we would set him safe on shore, God willing, either in Moscovy, or England, as he pleased, at our own charge, except the carriage of his goods. At this proposal, he was like a man transported, telling us, he would go with us all the world over; and we made preparations for our journey: but it was near four months before all the merchants were ready.

In the mean time, my partner and the pilot went express to the port where we first put in, to dispose of what goods had been left there, while I accompanied a Chinese merchant who was going to Nanquin, and there bought twentynine pieces of damask, with about, three hundred more of other fine filks; and, by the time my partner returned to Pekin, I had them all carried thither: our cargo in filks amounted to 4500l. sterling, which, together with tea, fine calicoes, nutmegs, and cloves, loaded eighteen camels for our share, besides what we rode upon, with two or three spare horses, and two more loaden with provisions; the company now was very great, making about four hundred horse, and above one hundred and twenty men, well armed and provided. We were of several nations, among whom were five Scotch merchants, inhabiting in Moscow, and well experienced in trade.

We set out from Pekin the beginning of February our style; and in two days more, we passed through the gate of the great China wall, which was erected as a fortification against the Tartars, being one hundred English miles long. We then entered a country not near so populous, chiesly under the power of plundering Tartars, several companies of whom we perceived riding on poor starved horses, contemptible as themselves, without order or discipline. One time our leader, for the day gave us leave to go a hunting; but what do you think we hunted? only a parcel of sheep, which indeed exceeded any in the world for wildness and swiftness; but while we were pursuing this game, it was our chance to meet with about forty Tartars,

who no sooner perceived us, but one of them blew a horn, at the sound of which there soon appeared a troop of forty or fifty more, at about a mile's distance. Hereupon, one of the Scots merchants (who knew their ways) ordered us to advance towards them, and attack them immediately. As we advanced, they let fly a volley of arrows, which happily fell a little short of us; this made us halt a little, to return the compliment with bullets; and then being led up by the bold Scot, we fired our pistols in their faces, and drew out our swords; but there was no occasion; for they slew like timorous sheep, and only three of them remained, beckoning to the rest to come back. But our brave commander gallops up to them by himself, shot one dead, knocked another off his horse, while the third ran away; and thus ended our battle with the Tartars.

We travelled a month more through the Emperor of China's dominions; and at length coming to one of their towns about a day and a half's journey from the city of Naum, I wanted to buy, a camel. The person I spoke to would have brought me one, but, like a fool, I must go along with him, about two miles from the village. My old pilot and I walked on foot, forfooth, for fome variety, when coming to the place where the camels were kept as in a park guarded by Chinese soldiers, we there agreed and bought one, which the Chinese man that came along with me led along the road. But we had not gone far, before we were attacked by five Tartars, mounted on horseback, two of whom seized the man, took the camel from him, and rode away, while the other three approached us, the first of whom suddenly seized me as I was drawing my fword, the second knocked me down, but my old trusty Portuguese, taking a pistol out of his pocket, which I knew nothing of, and coming up to the fellow that struck me, he with one hand pulled him off his horse, and then shot him dead upon the spot; then taking his scymitar, he firuck at the man that stopped us, but missing him, cut off one of his horse's ears, the pain of which made him throw his rider to the ground. The poor Chineese who had led the camel, feeing the Tartar down, runs to him, and feizing upon his pole-ax, wrenched it from his hands, and knocked his brains out. But there was another Tartar to deal with, who feeming neither inclined to fight nor fly, and my old man having begun to charge his pistol, the very fight of it firuck such a terror into the wretch, that away he scoured,

leav an a

to c for ag ove gra ven Ta feei me fam bei den bro gre Ch ... ftra me del Ind obj fen eno

fo i

hac

eve

nui cit; obe car and in

bol

leaving my old pilot, rather my champion and defender,

an absolute victory.

rn,

rty

one

us

ly.

ch

le,

ed

nd

ey

ed,

m-

id.

y ;

of

eir

of

to

go

1y

y,

in

nd

th

re k,

n,

ne

y

I

k

en

ne

F

W

ie

g

1,

d

it

By this time being awakened from my trance, I began to open my eyes, wondering where I was, having quite forgot all that passed; but my senses returning, and feeling a great pain in my head, and feeing the blood was running over my clothes, I instantly jumped upon my feet, and grasped my sword in my hand, with a resolution to take revenge; but no enemies now remained, except the dead Tartar, with his horse standing by him. The old man feeing me recovered, whom he though flain, ran towards me, and embraced me with the greatest tenderness, at the fame time examining into my wound, which was far from being mortal. When we returned to the village, the man demanded payment for his camel, which I refusing, we brought the cause before a Chinese judge, who acted with great impartiality: Having heard both fides, he asked the Chinese man that went with me, whose servant he was? "Sir," faid he, " I am nobody's, but went with the ftranger at his request:" " Why then," faid the judge, "you are the stranger's servant for the time, and the camel being delivered to his fervant, it is the same as though delivered to himself, and accordingly he must pay for it." Indeed, the case was so fairly stated, that I had nothing to object to it; fo, having paid for that I was robbed of, I fent for another, but did not go myself to fetch it, as I had enough of that sport before.

The city of Naum is a frontier of the Chinese empire, so fortified, as some will tell you, that millions of Tartars cannot batter down their walls; by which certainly one might think one of our cannons would do more execution

than all their legions.

When we were within a day's march of that city, we had information that the governor had fent messengers to every part of the road, to inform the travellers and caravans to halt, till a guard was sent to protect them from the numerous bodies of Tartars that lately appeared about the city. This news put us into great consternation; but, obeying the orders, we stopt; and two days after, there came two hundred soldiers from a garrison of the Chinese, and three hundred more from Naum; thus guarded both in the front and rear, with our own men in the slanks, we boldly advanced, thinking we were able to combat with ten thousand Mogul Tartars, if they appeared.

Early next morning, in our march from a little well fituated town called Changu, after having passed a river, and entered upon a defert of about fifteen or fixteen miles over, we foon beheld, by a cloud of dust that was raised, that the enemy was approaching. This much dispirited the Chinese. My old pilot took notice of it, and called out, "Seignior Inglife, those fellows must be encouraged, or they will ruin us all; and I am afraid, if the Tartars attack us, they will all run away." "Why, Seignior," faid I, "what shall be done in this case?" "Done," says he, " why, let fifty of our men advance, and flank them on each wing. I know the fellows will fight well enough in company." We accordingly took his advice, and marched, fifty to the right wing, and the same number to the left, and with the rest made a line of reserve, leaving the last two hundred men to guard the camels, or to affift us as occasion required.

t

1

h

t

P

I

2

b

1

Thus prepared, a party of the enemy came forward, viewing our posture, and traversing the ground on the front of our line. Hereupon we ordered the two wings to move on, and give them a salute with their shot; which accordingly was done. This put a stop to their proceedings; for immediately wheeling off to their left, they all marched away, and we saw no more of them. They had undoubtedly given an account to their companions of what reception they might expect, which made them so easily

give over their enterprize.

When we came to the city of Naum, we returned the governor hearty thanks, and dispersed an hundred crowns among the soldiers that guarded us. We rested there one day, and then proceed on our travels, passing several great rivers and deserts; and on the 13th of April we came to the frontiers of Muscovy, the first town of which was called

Argun.

This happy occasion, as I thought, of coming into a Christian country, made me congratulate the Scots merchant upon it. He smiled at that, telling me not to rejoice too soon; "for," said he, "except the Russian soldiers in garrison, and a few inhabitants of the cities upon the road, all the rest of this country, for above a thousand miles, is inhabited by the most ignorant and barbarous Pagans."

We advanced from the river Arguna, by moderate journies, and found convenient garrifons on the road, filled

with Christian foldiers, for the security of commerce, and for the convenient lodgings of travellers: but the inhabitants of the country were mere Pagans, worshipping the sun, moon, and stars. We particularly observed this idolatry near the river Arguna, at a city inhabited by Tartars and Ruffians, called Nerifinkey. Being curious to fee their way of living, while the caravan continued to rest themfelves in that city, I went to one of their villages, where there was to be one of their folemn facrifices. There I beheld, upon the stump of an old tree, an idol of wood, more ugly than the representation of the devil himself: its head resembled no living creature; its ears were as big and as high as goats' horns, a crooked note, four cornered mouth, and horrible teeth: it was clothed in sheep skins, had a great Tartar bonnet, with two horns growing thro? it, and was eight feet high, without feet, legs, or proportion. Before this idol their lay fixteen or seventeen people, who brought their offerings, and were making their prayers, while at a distance stood three men, and one bullock, as victims to this ugly monster.

Such stupendous sacrilege as this, in robbing the true God of his honour, filled me with the greatest astonishment and reslection: which soon turning to rage and sury, I rode up to the image, and cut in pieces the bonnet that was upon his head with my sword, so that it hung down by one of the horns, while one of my men that was with me, pulled at it by his sheep skin garment. Immediately an hideous howling and outcry ran through the village, and two or three hundred people coming about our ears, we

were obliged to fly for it.

But I had not done with the monster; for the caravan being to rest three nights in the town, I told the Scots merchant what I had seen, and that I was resolved to take sour or sive men well armed with me, in order to destroy the idol, and shew the people how little reason they had to trust in a god who could not save himself. At first he laughed at me, representing the danger of it, and when it was destroyed, what time had we to preach to them better things, whose zeal and ignorance was in the highest degree, and both unparalleled? that if I should be taken by them, I should be served as a poor russian, who contemned their worship; that is, to be stripped naked, and tied to the top of the idol, there shot at with arrows till my body was full of them, and then burnt as a sacrifice to the monster;

T.

er,

tu-

hey us, hat

ng. y.''

vith union

ont ove

rdgs; arun-

hat

fily the vns

eat to

led

errelian

e a ar-

ate

" but Sir," faid he, " fince your zeal carries you fo far, rather than you should be alone I will accompany you, and bring a flout fellow equal to yourfelf, if you will, to affift you in this defign: and accordingly he brought one Captain Richardson, who, hearing the story, readily consented: but my partner declined it, being altogether out of his way: and so we three, and my servant, resolved to execute this exploit about midnight; but upon fecond thoughts we deferred it to the next night, by reason that the caravan being to go from thence the next morning, we should be out of the governor's power, The better to effectuate my defign, I procured a Tartar's sheep skin robe, a bonnet, with bow and arrows, and every-one of us got the like habits. The first night we spent in mixing combustible matter with aqua vitæ, gunpowder, &c. having a good quantity of tar in a little pot: next night we came up to the idol about eleven o'clock, the moon being up. We found none guarding it; but we perceived a light in the house, where we had feen the priests before. One of our men was for firing the hut, another for killing the people, and a third for making them prisoners, while the idol was destroyed. We agreed to the latter; so knocking at the door, we seized the first that opened it, and stopping his mouth and tying his feet, we left him. We served the other two in the like manner; and then the Scots merchant fet fire to the composition, which frightened them so much, that we brought them all away prisoners to their wooden god. There we fell to work with him, daubing him all over with tar mixed with tallow and brimstone, stopping his eyes, ears, and mouth full of gunpowder, with a great piece of wild-fire in his bonnet, and environed it with dry forrage. All this being done, we unloosed and ungagged the prisoners, and fet the idol on fire, which the gunpowder blowing up, the shape of it was deformed, rent, and split, which the forage utterly confumed; for we staid to see its destruction, lest the ignorant idolatrous people should have thrown themfelves into the flame. And thus we came away undifcovered, in the morning appearing as busy among our fellow travellers, as nobody could have suspected any other, but that we had been in our beds all night.

Next morning we fet out, and had gone but a small distance from the city, when there came a multitude of people of the country to the gates of the city, demanding

I of them, and then bank as a marker to the monter;

Ly

d

0-

l;

1:

is

e-

e-

ut

e-

th

S.

th

ar

ut

d-

ve

g

a-Ve

ed

ig ke

nht

we

ed nd

in

his

nd

he

eft

m-

-0:

ow

all

of

ng

fatisfaction of the Russian governor for insulting their priests, and burning their great Cham Chi-Thaungu, who dwelt in the sun, and no mortal would violate this image but some Christian miscreants; and being already no less than thirty thousand strong, they announced war against him and all his Christians.

The governor affured them he was ignorant of the matter, and that none of his garrison had been abroad; that indeed there was a caravan that went away that morning, and that he would fend after them to inquire into it; and whoever was the offender, should be delivered into their hands. This fatisfied them for the present, but the governor sent to inform us, that if any of us had done it, we should make all the haste away possible, while he kept them in play as long as he could. Upon this we marched two days and two nights, stopping but very little, till at last we arrived at a village called Plothus, and hasted to Jarawena, another of the Czar's colonies. On the third day, having entered the defert, and paffed the lake called Shaks Ofer, we beheld a numerous body of horse on the other side of it to the north, who supposed we had passed on that side of the lake; but either having found their mistake, or being certainly informed of the way we took, they came upon us towards the dulk of the evening, just as we had pitched our camp between two little but very thick woods, with a little river running before our front and some felled trees with which we covered our rear; a precaution we always took, and which we had just finished when the enemy came up. They did not fall on us immediately, but fent three meffengers, demanding the men who had infulted their priests, and burnt their god Cham Chi-Thaungu, that they might be burnt with fire, that if this was complied with, they would peaceably depart; but if not, they would defroy one and all of us, Our men stared at one another on receipt of this message, but Nobody was the word, as indeed nobody knew it, but he who did it. Upon which the leader of the caravan returned for answer, " That they were peaceable merchants, who meddled with none of their priests and gods; and therefore defired them not to disturb us, and put us to the necessity of defending our-But so far was this from fatisfying them, that the next morning coming to our right, they let fly a volley of arrows among us, which happily did not hurt any, because we sheltered ourselves behind our baggage. We expected

L z

however to come to a closer engagement; but were happily faved by a cunning fellow, a Cossack, who obtaining leave of the leader to go out, mounts his horse, rides directly from our rear, and taking a circuit, comes up to the Tartars, as though he had been sent express, and tells them a formal story, that the wretches who had burnt the Cham Chi-Thaungu, were gone to Shiheilka, with a resolution to burn the god Shal-Isar, belonging to the Tongueses. Upon which, believing this cunning Tartar, who was servant to our Muscovites, away they drove to Shiheilka, and in less than three minutes were out of sight, nor did we ever hear of them more.

When we came to the city of Jarawena, we rested five days, and then entered into a frightful desert, which held us twenty-three days march, infested with several small companies of robbers, or Mogul Tartars, who never had the courage to attack us. After we had passed over this desert; we found several garrisons to defend the caravans from the violence of the Tartars: In particular the Governor of Adinskoy offered us a guard of fifty men to the next station, if we apprehended any danger. The people here retained the same paganism and barbarity, only they were not fo dangerous, being conquered by the Muscovites. The clothing, both of men and women, is of the skins of beafts, living under the ground in vaults and caves, which have a communication with one another. They have idols almost in every family; besides, they adore the sun and flars, water and fnow; and the least uncommon thing that happens in the elements, alarms them as much as thunder and lightening does the unbelieving Jews.

Nothing remarkable occurred in our march through this country. When we had gone through the defert, after two days farther travel, we came to Jenezoy, a Muscovite city, on the great river so called, which we were told parted Europe from Asia. The inhabitants here were very little better, though intermixed with the Muscovites; but the wonder will cease, when I inform my reader of what was observed to me, that the Czar rather converts the Tartars with soldiers than clergymen, and is more proud to make

them faithful subjects, than good Christians.

From this city to the river Oby, we travelled over a pleasant, fruitful, but very uncultivated country, for want of good management and people, and those few are mostly

e

y

-

a

n

0

n

0

r

1

Pagans. This is the place where the Muscovite criminals are banished to, if they are not put to death. The next city we come to, was the capital city of Siberia, called Tobolski, when having been almost feven months on our journey, and winter drawing on apace, my partner and I confulted about our particular affairs, in what manner we should dispose of ourselves. We had been told of sledges and rein deer to carry us over the fnow in the winter feafon, the fnow being frozen so hard, that the sledges can run upon the furface without any danger of going down. As I was bound to England, I now behoved either to go with the caravan to Jeroslaw, from thence west to Marva, and the gulf of Finland, and so by land or sea to Denmark; or else I must leave the caravan at a little town on the Dwina, and so to Archangel, where I was certain of shipping either to England, Holland, or Hamburgh. One night I happened to get into the company of an illustrious, but banished Prince, whose company and virtues were such as made me to propose to him a method how he might obtain his liberty. "My dear friend," said he, "as I am here happily free from my miserable greatness, with all its attendants of pride, ambition, avarice, and luxury, if I should escape from this place, those pernicious seeds may again revive, to my lasting disquietude; therefore let me remain in a bleffed confinement, for I am but flesh, a mere man, with passions and affections as such; O be not my friend and tempter too!" Struck dumb with surprise, I stood silent a-while; nor was he less in disorder, by which perceiving he wanted to give vent to his mind, I defired him to confider of it, and so withdrew. But about two hours after he came to my apartment: "Dear friend," faid he, "though I cannot consent to accompany you, I shall have this fatiffaction in parting, that you leave me an honest man still; but as a testimony of my affection to you, be pleased to accept this present of fables."

In return for his compliment, I fent my fervant next morning to his Lordship with a small present of tea, two pieces of China damask, and four little wedges of gold; but he only accepted the tea, one piece of damask, and one piece of gold, for the curiosity of the Japan stamp that was upon it. Not long after he sent for me, and told me, that what he had refused himself, he hoped upon his account, I would grant to another, whom he should name: In short it was his only son, who was about two hundred

fu

to

25

fi

W

miles distant from him, on the other side of the city, whom he faid he would fend for, if I gave my confent. This I foon complied with; upon which he fent his fervants next day for his fon, who returned in twenty days time, bringing feven horses loaded with valuable firs. At night the young Lord was conducted incognito into our apartment, where his father presented him to me. We then concerted the best ways for travelling, and after having bought a confiderable quantity of fables, black fox skins, fine ermines, &c. (which I fold at Archangel at a good price) we fet out from this city the beginning of June, making a small caravan, being about thirty-two horses and camels, of which I represented the head. My young Lord had with him a very faithful Siberian fervant, well acquainted with the roads: We shunned the principal towns and cities, as Tumen, Soli-Kamolkoi, and several others, by reason of their firitiness in examining travellers, lest any of the banished persons of distinction should escape. Having passed the river Kama, we came to a city on the European fide, called Soloy Kamoskoi, where we found the people mostly Pagans, as before. We then passed a desert of about two hundred miles over; but in other places it is near feven hundred. In passing this wild place, we were beset by a troop of men on horseback, and about five and forty men armed with bows and arrows. At first they looked earnestly on us, and then placed themselves in our way. We were above fixteen men, and drew up a little line before our camels. My young Lord fent out his Siberian fervant, to know who they were; but, when he approached them, he neither knew a word they faid, nor would they admit him to come near them at his peril, but prepared to shoot him. return, he told us he believed them to be Calmuck Tartars; and that there were more upon the defert. This was but a small comfort to us; yet seeing a little grove, about a quarter of a mile's distance, we moved to it, by the old Portuguese pilot's advice, without meeting with any oppofition. Here we found a marshy piece of ground, and a fpring of water running into a little brook on one fide, which joined another like it a little farther off, and these two formed the head of the river called Writska. As soon as we arrived, we went to work, cutting great arms off the trees, and laying them hanging (not quite off) from one tree to another. In this fituation we waited the motion of the enemy, without perceiving any advancement they made

mI

xt

3-

ne

d

a

s,

et

11

h

a

1-

ir

d

e

d

towards us. About two hours before night, being joined by fome others, in all about fourfcore horse, among whom we fancied were some women, they came upon us with great fury. We fired without ball, calling to them in the Ruffian tongue, to know their business; but they, either not knowing, or feeming not to unnerstand us, came directly to the wood fide, not confidering that we were so fortified, as that they could not break in. Our old pilot, the Portuguese, proved both our captain and engineer, and defired us not to fire, till they came within pistol that; and when he gave the word of command, then to take the furest aim: but he did not bid us give fire, till they were within two pikes length of us, and then we killed fourteen of them, wounded several, as also their horses, having every one of us loaded our pieces with two or three bullets at least. So much were they surprised at our undauntedness, that they retired about a hundred roods from In the mean while we loaded our pieces again, and fallying out, secured four or five of their horses, whose riders we found were killed, and perceived them to be Tartars. About an hour after, they made another attempt, to see where they might break in; but finding us ready to receive them, they retired.

All that night we wrought hard, in strengthening our fituation, and barricading the entrances into the woods; but when day-light came, we had a very unwelcome difcovery; for the enemy, being encouraged by their numbers, had fet up eleven or twelve tents, in form of a camp, about three quarters of a mile from us. I must confess, I was never more concerned in my life, giving myfelf and all that I had over for lost. And my partner declared, that as the loss of his goods would be his ruin, before they should be taken from him, he would fight to the last drop of As we could not pretend to force our way, we had recourse to a stratagem; we kindled a large fire, which burnt all night; and no fooner was it dark, but we purfued our journey towards the pole, or north star, and travelling all night, by fix o'clock in the morning we came to a Ruffian village, called Kertza, and from thence came to a large town named Ozonoys, where we heard that several troops of Calmuck Tartars had been abroad upon the defert, but that we were past all danger. In five days after we came to Veuslima, upon the river Witzedga; from thence we came to Lawrenskoy, on the third of July, where, provid-

ing ourselves with two luggage boats, and a convenient bark, we embarked the feventh, and arrived at Archangel the eighteenth, after a year, five months, and three days journey, including the eight months and odd days at To-We came from Archangel the 20th of August in the same year, and arrived at Hamburgh the 30th of September. Here my partner and I made a very good fale of our goods, both those of China and Siberia; when, dividing our effects, my share came to 34751. 178. 3d. after all the loffes we had fustained, and charges we had been Here the young Lord took his leave of me, in order to go to the court of Vienna, not only to feek protection, but to correspond with his father's friends. After we had staid fourmonths in Hamburgh, I went from thence over land to the Hague, where embarking in the packet, I arrived in London the 10th of January 1705, after ten years and nine months absence from England.

VISION of the ANGELIC WORLD.

CHAP. I. Of SOLITUDE.

TOWEVER folitude is looked upon as a restraint to the pleasures of the world, in company and conversation, yet it is a happy state of exemption from a sea of trouble, an inundation of vanity and vexation, of confusion and difappointment. While we enjoy ourselves, neither the joy nor forrow of other men affect us: We are then at liberty, with the voice of our foul, to speak to God. By this we shun such frequent trivial discourse, or even becomes an obflruction to virtue: and how often do we find that we had reason to wish we had not been in company, or said nothing when we were there? for either we offend God by the impiety of our discourse, or lay ourselves open to the violence of defigning people by our unguarded expressions; and frequently feel the coldness and treachery of pretended friends, when once involved in trouble and affliction; of fuch unfaithful intimates (I should say enemies) who rather by false inuendoes would accumulate iniferies upon us, than honestly affift us when under the hard hand of advertity. But

el

ft

d

rt

in a state of solitude, when our tongues cannot be heard, except from the great Majesty of Heaven, how happy are we, in the bleffed enjoyment of conversing with our Maker! It is then we make him our friend, which fets us above the envy and contempt of wicked men. When a man converses with himself, he is sure that he does not converse with an enemy. Our retreat should be to good company, and good books. I mean not by folitude, that a man should retire into a cell, a desert, or a monastry: which would be altogether an useless and unprofitable restraint: for as men are formed for society, and have an absolute necessity and dependence upon one another; so there is a retirement of the foul, with which it converses in heaven, even in the midst of men; and indeed no man is more fit to speak freely, than he who can, without any violence to himself, refrain his tongue, or keep silence altogether. As to religion, it is by this the fould gets acquainted with the hidden mysteries of the holy writings; here she finds those floods of tears, in which good men wash themselves day and night, and only makes a visit to God, and his holy angels. In this conversation the truest peace and most solid joy are to be found; it is a continual feast of contentment on earth, and the means of attaining everlasting happiness in heaven.

CHAP. II. Of HONESTY.

Honesty is a virtue beloved by good men, and pretended to by all other persons. In this there are several degrees: to pay every man his own is the common law of honesty: but to do good to all mankind, is the chancery law of honesty; and this chancery court is in every man's breast, where his conscience is a Lord Chancellor. Hence it is, that a miser, though he pays every body their own, cannot be a honest man, when he does not discharge the good offices that are incumbent on a friendly, kind, and generous person: for, saith the prophet Isaiah, chap. xxxii. ver. 7, 8. " The instruments of a churl are evil: he deviseth wicked devices to destroy the poor with lying words, even when the needy speaketh right. But the liberal soul deviseth liberal things, and by liberal things shall he stand." It is certainly honesty to do every thing the law requires; but should we throw every poor debtor into prifon till he has paid the utmost farthing, hang every male-

Ls.

factor without mercy, exact the penalty of every bond, and the forfeiture of every indenture, this would be downright cruelty, and not honesty: and it is contrary to that general rule, "To do to another, that which you would have done unto you." Sometimes necessity makes an honest man a knave; and a rich man a honest man, because he has no occasion to be a knave. The trial of honesty is this: Did you ever want bread, and had your neighbour's loaf in keeping, and would starve rather than eat it? Were you ever arrested, having in your custody another man's cash, and would rather go to goal, than break it? if so, this indeed may be reckoned honesty. For King Solomon tells us, "That a good name is better than life, and is a precious ointment, and which, when a man has once lost, he has nothing left worth keeping."

CHAP. III. Of the present state of Religion in the world.

I doubt, indeed, there is much more devotion than religion in the world, more adoration than supplication, and more hypocrify than sincerity; and it is very melancholy to consider, what numbers of people there are surnished with the powers of reason and gifts of nature, and yet abandoned to the grossest ignorance and depravity. But it would be uncharitable for us to imagine (as some Papists, abounding with too much ill nature, the only scandal to religion, do) that they will certainly be in a state of damnation after this life; for how can we think it inconsistent with the mercy and goodness of an infinite Being, to damnathose creatures, when he has not surnished them with the light of the gospel? or how can such proud, conceited, and cruel bigots, prescribe rules to the justice and mercy of God?

We are told by some people, that the great image which King Nebuchadnezzar set up to be adored by his people, held the representation of the sun in its right hand, as the principal object of adoration. But to wave this discourse of Heathens, how many self-contradicting principles are there held among Christians? and how do we doom one another to the devil, while all profess to worship the same Deity, and to expect the same salvation?

When I was at Portugal, there was held at that time the court of justice of the inquisition. All the criminals were carried in procession to the great church, where eight of them were habited in gowns and caps of canvas, where on the torments of hell were displayed, and they were condemned and burnt for crimes against the Catholic faith

and Bleffed Virgin.

I am forry to make any reflection upon Christians; but, indeed, in Italy the Roman religion feems the most cruel and mercenary upon earth; and a very judicious person, who travelled through Italy from Turkey, tells, "That " there is only the face and outward pomp of religion " there: that the church protects murderers and affaffins; and then delivers the civil magistrates over to Satan for doing justice; interdicts whole kingdoms, and shuts up " the churches for want of paying a few ecclefiaftical dues, " and fo puts a stop to religion for want of their money: " that the court of Inquisition burnt two men for speaking dishonourably of the Bleffed Virgin; and the missiona-" ries of China tolerated the worshiping the devil by their new converts: that Italy was the theatre, where religion was the grand opera; and that the Popish clergy were on other than the stage players."

As to religion in Poland, they deny Christ to be the Messiah, or that the Messiah has come in the sless. And as to their Protestants, they are the followers of Lælius Socinus, who denied our Saviour's divinity; and have no concern about the divine inspiration of the Holy Ghost.

In Muscovy their churches are built of wood, and, indeed, they have but wooden priests, though of the Greek church; they pray as much to St. Nicholas, as the Papists do to the Virgin Mary, for protection in all their difficulties or afflictions.

As to Lutherans, they only differ from the Romans in believing consubstantiation, instead of transubstantiation; but, like them, they are much pleased with the external gallantry and pomp, more than the true and real practice of it.

In France I found a world of priests, the streets every where crowded with them, and the churches full of women: but surely never was a nation so full of blind guides, so ignorant of religion, and even as void of morals, as those people who confess their sins to them.

Does it not feem strange, that, while all men own the Divine Being, there should be so many different opinions as to the manner of paying him obedience in the Christian

L 6

church? I know not what reason to assign for this, except it be their different capacities and faculties.

And, indeed, upon this account, we have perceived, in all Christian countries, what mortal feuds have been about religion; what wars and bloodshed have molested Europe, till the general pacification of the German troubles at the treaty of Westphalia; and since those times, what persecution in the same country among the churches of the Lutherans; and should I take a prospect at home, what unhappy divisions are between Christians in this kingdom, about Episcopacy and Presbytery, the church of Englandmen and the Dissenters opposing one another like St. Paul and St. Peter, even to the face; that is, they carry on the dispute to the utmost extremity.

It might be a question, why there are such differences in religious points, and why these breaches should be more hot and irreconcileable? All the answer I can give to this, is, that we inquire more concerning the truth of religion, than any other nation in the world; and the anxious concern we have about it, makes us jealous of every opinion, and tenacious of our own; and this is not because we are more furious and rash than other people; but the truth is, we are more concerned about them, and being sensible that the scripture is the great rule of faith, the standard for life and doctrine, we have recourse to it ourselves, without submitting to any pretended infallible judge upon earth.

There is another question, pertinent to the former, and that is, What remedy can we apply to this malady? And to this I must negatively answer, Not to be less religious, that we may differ the less. This is striking at the very root of all religious differences; for, certainly, were they to be carried on with a peaceable spirit, willing to be informed, our variety of opinions would not have the name of differences; nor should we separate in communion of charity, though we did not agree in several articles of religion.

Nor is there a less useful question to start, namely, Where will our unhappy religious differences end? To which, I hope, I may answer, in Heaven; there all unchristian and unbrotherly differences will find a period; there we shall embrace many a sinner, that here we think it a dishonour to converse with; and perceive many a heart we have broken here with censures, reproachings, and revilings, made whole again by the balm of the same Redeemer's blood. Here we shall perceive there have been other slocks than

those of our fold; that those we have excommunicated have been taken into that superior communion; and, in a word, that those contradicting notions and principles which we thought inconsistent with true religion, we shall then find reconcileable to themselves, to one another, and to the fountain of truth. If any man ask me, Why our differences cannot be ended on earth? I answer, Were we all thoroughly convinced, that then they would be reconciled, we would put an end to them before; but this is impossible to be done; for as men's certain convictions of truth are not equal to one another, or the weight or significancy of such veracity; so neither can a general effect of this affair

be expected on this fide of time.

Before I conclude this chapter, I shall beg leave to difcourse a little of the wonderful excellency of negative religion and negative virtue. The latter fets out, like the Pharisee, with, God, I thank thee; it is a piece of religious pageantry, the hypocrite's hope: and, in a word, it is positive vice: for it is either a mask to deceive others, or a mist to deceive ourselves. A man that is clothed with negatives, thus argues: I am not fuch a drunkard as my landlord, such a thief as my tenant, such a swearer as his neighbour; neither am I a cheat, an athiest, a rakish fellow, or a highwayman; no! I live a fober, regular, retired life: I am a good man, I go to church; God, I thank thee. Now, though a man boasts of his virtue in contradiction to the vices mentioned, yet a person had better have them altogether than the man himself; for he is so full of himself, so persuaded that he is good and religious enough already, that he has no thoughts of any thing, except it be to pull off his hat to God Almighty now and then, and thank him that he has no occasion for him; and has the vanity to think that his neighbours must imagine well of him too.

The negative man, though he is no drunkard, is yet intoxicated with the pride of his own worth; a good neighbour and peace-maker in other families, but a tyrant in his own; appears in church for a shew, but never falls upon his knees in his closet; does all his alms before men, to be seen of them; eager in the duties of the second table, but regardless of the first; appears religious, to be taken notice of by men, but without intercourse or communication between God and his own soul: Pray, what is this man? or what comfort is there of the life he lives? he is insensi-

fible of faith, repentance, and a Christian mortified life; in a word, he is perfectly a stranger to the essential part of

religion.

Let us for a while enter into the private and retired part of his conversation: What notions has he of his mispent hours, and of the progress of time to the great centre and gulph of life, eternity? Does he know how to put a right value on time, or esteem the life-blood of his soul, as it really is, and act in all the moments of it, as one that must account for them? if then you can form an equality between what he can do, and what he shall receive; less can be founded upon his negative virtue, or what he has forborn to do: And if neither his negative nor positive piety can be equal to the reward, and to the eternity that reward is to last for, what then is to become of the Pharisee, when he is to be judged by the sincerity of his repentance, and rewarded, according to the infinite grace of God, with a state of blessedness to an endless eternity?

When the negative man converses with the invisible world, he is filled with as much horror and dread as Felix, when St. Paul reasoned to him of temperance, righteousness, and of judgment to come; for Felix, though a great philosopher, of great power and reverence, was a negative man, and he was made sensible by the Apostle, that, as a life of virtue and temperance was its own reward, by giving a healthy body, a clear head, and a composed life; so eternal happiness must proceed from another spring; namely, the infinite unbounded grace of a provoked God, who having erected a righteous tribunal, Jesus Christ would separate such as by faith and repentance he had brought home and united to himself by the grace of adoption, and on the foot of his having laid down his life as a ranfom for them, had appointed them to falvation, when all the philosophy, temperance, and righteousness in the world besides had been ineffectual. And this, I say, it was, that made Felix,

this negative man, tremble.

CHAP. IV. Of listening to the voice of Providence.

The magnificent and wife king Solomon bids us cry after knowledge, and lift up our voice for understanding; by which is meant, religious knowledge; for it follows:

Then shalt thou understand the fear of the Lord, and find the knowledge of God." By which undoubted.

ly he meant, to inquire after every thing he has permitted us to know, and not to fearch into those ways that are unfearchable, and are effectually locked up from our knowledge.—Now, "as listening to the voice of Providence" is my present subject, I intend, in the first place, to write to those who own, 1. That there is a God, a first great, moving cause of all things, and eternal power, prior, and consequently superior to all created power or being.—2. That this eternal power, which is God, is the sovereign creator and governor of heaven and earth.

To avoid all needless distinctions, what persons in the Godhead exercise the creating, and what the governing power, I offer that glorious text. Psal. xxxiii. 6. where the whole Trinity is entitled to the whole creating work; and, therefore, in the next place, I shall lay down these two

propositions.

I. That the eternal God guides, by his providence, the

whole universe, which was created by his power.

II. That this providence manifests a particular care over, and concern in, the governing and directing man, the most

noble creature upon earth.

It is plain, that natural religion proves the first, by intimating the necessity of a providence guiding and governing the world, from the consequence of the wisdom, justice, prescience, and goodness of the Almighty Creator; for otherwise it would be absurd to think, that God should create a world, without any care or providence over it, in guiding the operations of nature, so as to preserve the order of his creation.

Revealed religion gives us a light into the care and concern of his providence, by the climate's being made habitable, the creatures subjected and made nourishing, and all vegetative life made medicinal; and all this for the sake of man, who is made viceroy to the King of the earth. The short description I shall give of providence is this: "That it is that operation of the power, of the wisdom, justice, and goodness of God, by which he influences, governs, and directs, not only the means, but the events of all things, which concern us in this sublunary world; the sovereignty of which we ought always to reverence, obey its motions, observe its distates, and listen to its voice. The prudent man foreseeth the evil, and hideth himself; that is, as I take it, there is a secret providence intimates to us, that some danger threatens, if we strive not to shun it."

fible of faith, repentance, and a Christian mortified life; in a word, he is perfectly a stranger to the essential part of

religion.

Let us for a while enter into the private and retired part of his conversation: What notions has he of his mispent hours, and of the progress of time to the great centre and gulph of life, eternity? Does he know how to put a right value on time, or esteem the life-blood of his soul, as it really is, and act in all the moments of it, as one that must account for them? if then you can form an equality between what he can do, and what he shall receive; less can be founded upon his negative virtue, or what he has forborn to do: And if neither his negative nor positive piety can be equal to the reward, and to the eternity that reward is to last for, what then is to become of the Pharisee, when he is to be judged by the sincerity of his repentance, and rewarded, according to the infinite grace of God, with a state of blessedness to an endless eternity?

When the negative man converses with the invisible world, he is filled with as much horror and dread as Felix, when St. Paul reasoned to him of temperance, righteousness, and of judgment to come; for Felix, though a great philosopher, of great power and reverence, was a negative man, and he was made sensible by the Apostle, that, as a life of virtue and temperance was its own reward, by giving a healthy body, a clear head, and a composed life; so eternal happiness must proceed from another spring; namely, the infinite unbounded grace of a provoked God, who having erected a righteous tribunal, Jesus Christ would separate such as by faith and repentance he had brought home and united to himself by the grace of adoption, and on the foot of his having laid down his life as a ranfom for them, had appointed them to falvation, when all the philosophy, temperance, and righteousness in the world besides had been ineffectual. And this, I say, it was, that made Felix,

this negative man, tremble.

CHAP. IV. Of listening to the voice of Providence.

The magnificent and wife king Solomon bids us cry after knowledge, and lift up our voice for understanding; by which is meant, religious knowledge; for it follows:

"Then shait thou understand the fear of the Lord, and find the knowledge of God." By which undoubted.

ly he meant, to inquire after every thing he has permitted us to know, and not to fearch into those ways that are unfearchable, and are effectually locked up from our know-ledge.—Now, "as listening to the voice of Providence" is my present subject, I intend, in the first place, to write to those who own, 1. That there is a God, a first great, moving cause of all things, and eternal power, prior, and consequently superior to all created power or being.—2. That this eternal power, which is God, is the sovereign creator and governor of heaven and earth.

To avoid all needless distinctions, what persons in the Godhead exercise the creating, and what the governing power, I offer that glorious text. Psal. xxxiii. 6. where the whole Trinity is entitled to the whole creating work: and, therefore, in the next place, I shall lay down these two

propositions.

I. That the eternal God guides, by his providence, tho

whole universe, which was created by his power.

II. That this providence manifests a particular care over, and concern in, the governing and directing man, the most

noble creature upon earth.

It is plain, that natural religion proves the first, by intimating the necessity of a providence guiding and governing the world, from the consequence of the wisdom, justice, prescience, and goodness of the Almighty Creator; for otherwise it would be absurd to think, that God should create a world, without any care or providence over it, in guiding the operations of nature, so as to preserve the order of his creation.

Revealed religion gives us a light into the care and concern of his providence, by the climate's being made habitable, the creatures subjected and made nourishing, and all vegetative life made medicinal; and all this for the sake of man, who is made viceroy to the King of the earth. The short description I shall give of providence is this: "That it is that operation of the power, of the wisdom, justice, and goodness of God, by which he influences, governs, and directs, not only the means, but the events of all things, which concern us in this sublunary world; the so-vereignty of which we ought always to reverence, obey its motions, observe its dictates, and listen to its voice. The prudent man foreseeth the evil, and hideth himself; that is, as I take it, there is a secret providence intimates to us, that some danger threatens, if we strive not to shun it."

The same day that Sir John Hotham kept out Hull against the royal martyr King Charles I. the same day Sir John Hotham was put to death by the parliament for that very action: The same day that the King himself signed the warrant for the execution of the Earl of Stafford, the same day of the month was he barbarously murdered by the blood-thirsty Oliverian crew: and the same day that King James II. came to the crown against the bill of exclusion, the same day he was voted abdicated by the parliament, and the throne silled with King William and Queen Mary.

The voice of fignal deliverances from sudden dangers, is not only a just call to repentance, but a caution against falling into the like danger; but such who are utterly careless of themselves after, shew a lethargy of the worst nature, which seems to me to be a kind of practical athiesm, or at least a living in a contempt of Heaven, when he receives good at the hand of his Maker, but is unconcerned from whence it comes, or to thank the bountiful hand that gave it; neither, when he receives evil, does it alter his manner

of life, or bring him to any state of humiliation.

We have a remarkable flory of two foldiers being condemned to death in Flanders. The general being prevailed upon to spare one of them, ordered them to cast dice upon the drum head for their lives; the first having thrown two fixes, the fecond fell a wringing his hands, having so poor a chance to escape; however, having thrown, he was furprised when he also threw other two fixes. The officer appointed to see the execution, ordered them to throw again; they did fo, and each of them threw fives; at which the foldiers that flood round, shouted, and said, neither of them was to die. Upon this, the officer acquainted the council of war, who ordered them to throw a third time, when they threw two fours: the General being acquainted with it, fent for the men, and pardoned them: I love, faid he, in such extraordinary cases, to listen to the voice of Providence.

We read in the holy writings, how God speaks to men by appearance of angels, or by dreams and visions of the night. As God appeared to Abraham, Lot, and Jacob: so angels have appeared to many in other cases, as to Manoah and his wife, Zechariah, the Virgin Mary, and to the apostles; others have been warned in a dream, as king Abimelech, the false prophet Balaam, and many others.

It is certainly a very great and noble inquiry, "What we shall be after this life?" for there is scarce a doubt, that there is a place referved for the reception of our fouls after death: for if we are to be, we must have a where, which the scriptures affert by the examples of Dives and Lazarus. The doctrine of spirits was long believed before our Saviour's time; for when the disciples of the bleffed Jesus perceived our Saviour walking on the fea, they were as much surprised as though they had seen a spirit. Nay, in those ages of the world, it was believed that spirits intermeddled in the affairs of mankind; and, throughout the Old Testament, I do not find any thing that in the least contradicts it. All the pains and labour that some learned men have taken, to confute the story of the witch of Endor, and the appearance of an old man personating Samuel, cannot make fuch apparitions inconfiftent with nature or religion; and it is plain, that it was either a good or bad spirit, that prophetically told the unfortunate king what should happen the next day; for, faid the spirit, "The "Lord will deliver thee into the hands of the Philistines; " and to-morrow shalt thou and thy sons be with me."

Abundance of strange notions possessed me, when I was in the desolate island; especially on a moonshine night, when every bush seemed a man, and every tree a man on horseback. When I crept into the dismal cave where the old goat lay expiring, whose articulate groans even resembled those of a man, how was I surprised! my blood chilled in my veins, a cold sweaty dew sat on my forehead, my hair stood upright, and my joints, like Balshazzer's knees, struck against one another. And, indeed, though I afterwards sound what it was, the remains of this surprise did not wear off for a great while; and I had frequently returns of those vapours on different occasions, and some-

times without any occasion at all.

One night, after having seen some appearance in the air, as I had just lain down in my bed, one of my feet pained me; after that came a numbness, succeeded with a tingling in my blood; when on a sudden I thought something alive lay upon me, from my knee to above half my leg. Upon this I slung myself out of bed where I thought the creature lay; but sinding nothing, "Lord deliver me from an evil spirit," said I, "what can this be?" When I lighted a candle, I could perceive no living creature in the place with me, but the poor parrot, who being frighted, cried

out, "Hold your tongue," and "What's the matter with you?" which words I had taught him, by faying so to him, when he made such screaming noises as I did not like. "Lord," said I aloud, "surely the devil has been here." "Hold your tongue," says Poll. I was then mad at the bird, and putting on my clothes, cried, "I am terribly frighted." "What's the matter with you?" says Poll. "You toad," said I, "I'll knock your brains out." "Hold your tongue," cried he again, and so fell a chattering, and calling Rebinson Crusoe, as he did before. But, after I had composed myself, and went to bed again I began plainly to see it was a distemper that affected my nerves, and so my terrors vanished at once.

How intelligences are given or received, we do not know; nor are we sensible how they are conveyed from spirits embodied, to ours that are in life; or, on the contrary, from us to them; the latter is certainly done without the help of the organs, and the former is conveyed by the understand-

ing, and the retired faculties of the foul.

The spirits, without the help of voices, converse, and the more particular discoveries of converse of the spirits, seem to me as follow: to wit, dreams, voices, noises, impulses,

kints, apprehensions, involuntary sadness, &c.

Dreams of old were the ways by which God himself was pleased to warn men what services to perform, and what to shun. Joseph was directed of God in a dream to go to Egypt; and so were the wise men warned in a dream to depart into their own country another way, to avoid the sury of Herod. I am not like those who think dreams are the mere dosings of a delirious head, or the relics of a day's perplexities or pleasures; but, on the contrary, I must beg leave to say, I never met with any capital mischief in my life, but I had some notice of it by a dream; and had I not been a thoughtless unbelieving creature, I might have taken many a warning, and avoided many of the evils I afterwards fell into, merely by total neglect of those dreams.

I was once present at a dispute between a layman and a clergyman, upon the subjects of dreams. The first thought no regard should be given unto them; that their communication from the invisible to the visible world was a mere chimera; without any solid foundation. For, first, said he, if dreams were from the agency of any prescient being, the motives would be more direct, and the discoveries more

plain, and not by allegories and emblematic fancies, expressing things impersect and obscure. 2. Since, with the notice of evil, there was not a power given to avoid it, it is not likely to proceed from a spirit, but merely fortuitous. 3. That the inconstancy of such notices, in cases equally important, proves they did not proceed from any such agent. 4. That as our most distinct dreams had nothing in them of any significancy, it would be irrational and vain to think that they came from heaven. And, 5. That as men were not always thus warned or supplied with notice of good or evil, so all men are not alike supplied with them; and what reason could we give, why one man or one woman should not have the same hints as another?

To all this the clergyman gave answer: 1. That as to the fignification of dreams, and the objections against them, as being dark and doubtful, they are expressed generally by hierogliphical reprefentations, fimilies, allusions, and figurative emblematic ways, by which means, for want of interpretation, the thing was not understood, and, confequently, the evil not shunned. 2. That we charge God foolishly, to say, that he has given the notice of evil, without the power to avoid it; for, if any one had not power to avoid the evil, it was no notice to him; and it was want of giving due heed to that notice, that men first neglected themselves, and then charged the Judge of all the earth with injustice. 3. That we ought not to find fault with the inconstancy of these notices; but rather with our weak understandings, by pretending dreams were not to be regarded, and negligent when the voice really spoke to us for our good. It is a mistake to say, dreams have no import at all: we might, with more reason, have said, none that we could perceive the reason of, owing to our blindness and supine negligence, too secure at one time, and too much alarmed at another; fo that the spirit, which we might be faid to be converfing with in a dream, was constantly and equally kind and careful; but our powers are not always in the same state of action, not equally attentive to, or retentive of the hints that were given. And, 5. To answer the last question, Why people are not equally supplied? This seemed to be no question: for Providence itself might have some share in the direction of it, and then that Providence might be limited by a superior direction; that as to the converse of spirits, he could not call it a flated converse: such a thing there was, but why

there was so much of it, and no more, was none of his bufiness, and that no such discovery had ever yet been made to mankind. Nor were we to imagine less of waking dreams, trances, visions, noises, hints, impulses, and all the waking testimonies of an invisible world, and of the communication that there is between us and them, which com-

t

.

. 2

1

¥

f

f

1

-

I

a

I

u

P

th

T

n

ri

·fe

le

W

m

po

th

al

fu

lif

m

hi

ge

da

yo

Ju

an

to

we

me my

cei

monly entertain us with our open eyes.

One time my fancy foared on high, to fee what discoveries I could make in those clearer regions. I found that such immense bodies as the sun, stars, planets, and moon, in the great circle of the lower heaven, are far from being found in the study of nature on the surface of the earth. Here I faw many things that we can entertain little or no notion of, in a state of commod life, and the emptiness of our notion, that the planets are habitable worlds; that is, created like ours, for the subsistence and existence of man and beaft, and the preservation of the vegetative and senfative life: No, no, this is, I assure you, a world of spirits; for here I saw a clear demonstration of Satan being the prince of the power of the air, keeping his court or camp, with innumerable angels to attend him; but his power is not fo great as we imagine, he can tempt us to the crime, but cannot force us to commit: Humanum est peccare. Neither has the devil power to force the world into a rebellion against heaven, though his legions are employed among favage nations, to fet up thei, master for a god, who make the heathens either worship him in person, or by his reprefentatives, idols and monsters, with the cruel facrifices of human blood. Now, as to the limitations of the devil's power, you must understand, that, as there are numbers of evil spirits employed in mischief, so there are numbers of good angels fent from the higher and bleffed abodes to difconcert and oppose their measures; and this every Christian, I hope, believes, when he prays to God, the father of spirits, to give his angels charge over him while he flumbereth and fleepeth. For if by these preventing powers the devil was not restrained, the earth would be subjected to dearth, droughts, and famine; the air infected with noxious fumes; and, in a word, mankind would be atterly destroyed, which might oblige our maker (if I may be allowed the expression) to the necessity of a new fat, or else have no more creatures to honour and worship

As the devil never wanted infinuators, I shall observe, that I learned a way how to make a man dream of what I

pleased. For instance, let us suppose one to be sound asleep; let another lay his mouth close to his ear, and whisper any thing so softly as not to awake him, the sleeping man shall dream of what has been so whispered in his ear; nay, I can affure you, those infinuating devils can do this even when we are awake, which I call impulses of the mind: for from whence, but from these infinuators, come our causeless pasfions, involuntary wickedness, or finful desires? Who else form ideas in the mind of man when he is alleep, or prefent terrible or beautiful figures to his fancy? Mr. Milton represents the devil tempting Eve in the shape of a toad, lying just at her ear, when in her bower she lay fast asleep; and brings in Eve telling Adam what an uneasy night's rest the had, and relating her dream to him. And likewise I believe that good spirits have the same intercourse with us, in warning us against those things that are evil, and prompting us to that which is good.

Were we to have the eyes of our fouls opened, through the eyes of our bodies, we should see this very immediate region of air which we breathe in, thronged with spirits now invisible, and which otherwise would be the most terrible; we should view the secret transactions of those messengers who are employed when the parting soul takes its leave of the reluctant body, and perhaps see things nature would shrink back from with the utmost terror and amazement. In a word, the curtain of Providence for the disposition of things here, and the curtain of judgment for the determination of the state of souls hereafter, would be alike drawn back; and what heart could support here its stuture state in life; much less that of its suture state after

life, eved good or bad.

g

e :

.

•

-

18:

,

g

. .

of

3,

n

;

e .

S

.

-

n

g

e

e l

S

f

of:

-

-

er

e

g

e t-

ld

I

p

A gentleman of my acquaintance, being about seven miles distant from London, a friend that came to dine with him, solicited him to go to the city. "What," said the gentleman, "is there any occasion for me?" "No, Sir," said the other, "nothing at all, except the enjoyment of your good company:" and so gave over importuning him. Just then a strong impulse of mind urged the gentleman, and pursued him like a voice, with, "Go to London, Go to London." "Hark ye," says he to his friend, "is all well at London? Am I wanted there? Or, did you ask me to go with you on any particular account? Are all my family well?" "Yes, indeed, Sir," said he, "I perceived them all very hearty; and I did not ask you to go

to London upon any particular account whatsoever, except it was for the sake of your good company." Again he put off his resolution: but still the impulse suggested to him, "Go to London;" and at length he did so. When he came there, he found a letter and a messenger had been there to seek him, and to tell him of a particular business, which was first and last above a thousand pounds to him, and which might inevitably have been lost, had he not gone

to London that night.

The obeying of several hints, or secret impulses, argues great wisdom. I knew a man that was under misfortunes, being guilty of misdemeanors against the government; when, absconding for fear of his ruin, all his friends advifing him not to put himself in the hands of the law, one morning as he awaked, he felt a strong impulse darting into his mind thus, "Write a letter to them;" and this was repeated several times to his mind, and at last he answered to it, as if it had been a voice, "Whom shall I write to?" Immediately it replied, "Write to the judge:" and this impulse pursued him for several days, till at length he took pen, and ink, and paper, and fat down to write to him: when immediately words flowed from his pen, like streams from a fair fountain, that charmed even himself with hopes of fuccess. In short, the letter was so strenuous in argument, so pathetic in its eloquence, and so persuafively moving, that when the judge had read it, he fent him an anfwer he might be easy, he would endeavour to make that matter light to him; and, indeed, never left exerting himfelf, till he had stopt the prosecution, and restored him to his liberty and family.

While I am mentioning these things, methinks it is very hard that we should obey the whispers of evil spirits, and not much rather receive the notices which good ones are pleased to give. We never perceive the missortune of this, but when in real danger; and then we cry, "My mind misgave me when I was going about it:" but if so, why do you slight the caution? Why not listen to it as to a voice? and then there had been no reason to make this

u

b

t

te

d

b

th

ca

complaint.

I remember about fourteen or fifteen years ago (as to time I cannot be very positive) there was a young clergyman in the city of Dublin, in Ireland, who dreamed a very uncommon dream, That a gentleman had killed his wife, a relation of his, by stabbing her in several places; the ,

e

S

e

-

15

d

"

15

k

:

18

25

1-

Y -

.

11

n-

to

ry

nd

re

is,

nd

hy

z his

to

gy-

ery

ife,

dright of this awaked him, but finding it a dream, he composed himself again to sleep, when he dreamed a second time the same dream. This made him a little uneasy; but thinking it proceeded from the impression made on his mind by the former, he went to fleep again, and dreamed the same dream a third time also. So troubled was he at this, that he arose, and knocked at his mother's chamber, told his concern, and his apprehensions that all was not right at his relation's house. . " Dear son," fays the good old gentlewoman, " do not mind those foolish dreams; and I very much wonder, that you, being a person in holy orders, should have regard to such allusions. Upon this he went to bed again, fell afleep, and dreamed a fourth time as before. And then indeed he put on his nightgown, and went to Smithfield, the place where his relation dwelt. Here it was, alas! he perceived his dream too fadly fulfilled, by feeing his relation, the young lady, big with child, who was a Protestant, stabbed in several places by her barbarous husband, Mr. Eustace, a violent Papist, only for some discourses of religion that happened the day before. After the wretch had stabbed her in three. places, he went to make his escape out at a window; but she cried out, " My dear! don't leave me, come back, and I shall be well again." At which he returned in a hellish rage, and gave her four wounds more; when, even in this condition, rifing from her bed, she wrapped herself in her night-gown, and went to the Lord Bishop of Rapho's chamber-door (the bishop lodging at that time in the house) " My Lord," said she, " O my Lord, make haste unto me:" but as foon as his Lordship came, she expired in his arms, refigning her precious foul into the hands of Almighty God. The cruel wretch her husband was shot by the pursuers, too good a death for one who deserved the gibbet : and the lady was univerfally lamented by all tender and religious people. And this tragical relation I have mentioned, upon the account of that impulse, or dream, that the clergyman had at the fatal time of the bloody action.

Some people make a very ill use of the general notion, that there are no apparitions nor spirits at all: which is worse than those who fancy they see them upon every occasion; for those carry their notions farther, even to annihilate the devil, and believe nothing about him, neither

of one kind or other: the next step they come to, is to conclude, "There is no God," and so atheism takes its rife in the same fink, with a carelessness about futurity. But there is no occasion to enter upon an argument to prove the being of the Almighty, or to illustrate his power by words, who has so many undeniable testimonies in the breasts of every rational being to prove his existence: and we have fufficient proofs enough to convince us of the great fuperintendency of Divine Providence in the minutest affairs of this world; the manifest existence of the invisible world; the reality of spirits, and intelligence between us and them. What I have faid, I hope, will not mislead any person, or be a means whereby they may delude themfelves; for I have spoken of these things with the utmost feriousness of mind, and with a sincere and ardent defire for the general good and benefit of the world.

FINIS.



